

THE  
REVERIE;  
OR, A  
FLIGHT  
TO THE  
PARADISE of FOOLS.

all Things vain, or all who in vain Things  
Build their fond Hopes of Glory, or lasting Fame,  
or Happiness in this or th' other Life.

MILTON.

---

BY THE  
AUTHOR of the ADVENTURES of a GUINEA.

---

VOLUME THE SECOND.

---

The THIRD EDITION.

---

DUBLIN:

Published by DILLON CHAMBERLAIN, at Faulkner's  
Head, No. 5, College-green.

M DCC LXXVI.

CO  
BO

*The scheme  
stance of  
Every man  
peace.*

*gilded ba  
trimonial  
the milita*

*toilet set.  
ing how  
with an  
modern f*

*ar! Hor  
think the  
ful of me  
gence.*

*longest*

# CONTENTS.

## BOOK the FIRST.

### CHAP. I.

*The scheme changes with the scene. A remarkable instance of military equity. The soldier's view in war. Every man for himself, the rule in war as well as peace.* Page 1

### CHAP. II.

*gilded bait to catch a gudgeon. The best cure for a matrimonial surfeit; with a new motive for entering into the military life.* p. 6

### CHAP. III.

*talet set out in a new taste. The advantage of knowing how to play one inconvenience against another; with an interesting instance of love and honour in the modern style.* p. 12

### CHAP. IV.

*Horrid war! They'll never want employment who think themselves well paid for their pains with a mouthful of moonshine. The great channel of secret intelligence.* p. 17

### CHAP. V.

*longest way about is often the nearest way home. The pleasure*  
A 2

pleasure of comparing notes creates friendship in affia-  
on. A new species of knight-errantry.

P.

## C H A P. VI.

*History of a remarkable lady. The great benefit of pi-  
education, with the force of good example. Comm-  
occurrences of various kinds, and their natural con-  
sequences.*

P.

## C H A P. VII.

*Continued. An unusual effect of absence. The loss of  
putation sometimes inconvenient. Reflections on ap-  
lification which all pretend to, and few possess; with  
a curious account of a man of consequence.*

P.

## C H A P. VIII.

*Continued. A short way of making love. Bargains  
made in few words; with an odd instance of old  
fashioned folly.*

## C H A P. IX.

*Continued. Many buyers raise the market. On ballan-  
avarice and vanity, the former kicks the beam.*

P.

## C H A P. X.

*Continued. Listeners seldom like what they hear.  
danger of provoking high blood; with the great  
of peace-making in the modern way,*

P.

## C H A P. XI.

*Concluded. A relapse is often worse than the first  
der. By the help of good friends, the grey mare  
the better horse. The whole concluded with some  
resting reflections, which prove that people should  
before they leap.*

P.

## CONTENTS.

III

### CHAP. XII.

*One story generally introduces another. The true object of female attention to dress. Common consequences of fashionable intimacy, and female friendship, with the secret of making a right use of a shoeing-horn.*

p. 53

### CHAP. XIII.

*more military matters. Politics on one side of the question.*

p. 58

### CHAP. XIV.

*new scheme for carrying on a war. An ill-timed doubt often disconcerts a good story. Anecdotes of a loyal family. The history of Sir ARCHIBALD, and ZELIDE, princess of Armenia.*

p. 63

### CHAP. XV.

*History of Sir ARCHIBALD, and ZELIDE, princess of Armenia, continued.*

p. 72

### CHAP. XVI.

*Continuation of the history of Sir ARCHIBALD and ZELIDE, princess of Armenia.*

p. 78

### CHAP. XVII.

*History of Sir ARCHIBALD and ZELIDE, princess of Armenia, concluded.*

p. 83

### CHAP. XVIII.

*Anecdotes of a loyal family concluded. Several instances of uncommon loyalty rewarded in the common manner, with some reflections interesting to those whom they may concern.*

p. 90

## C H A P. XIX.

*The difference between fighting battles in the field, and in the cabinet. The happiness of having good friends, with further instances of military equity.* p. 93

## C H A P. XX.

*War! War in procinct! The comforts of Greatness, a night scene, with a continuation of it, neither of the most agreeable nature.* p. 97

## C H A P. XXI.

*An approved medicine for a sick mind. A curious conversation between two great persons, with a compendious method of acquiring fame.* p. 111

## C H A P. XXII.

*A remarkable instance of poetic gratitude and justice, with some anecdotes of a celebrated genius.* p. 115

## BOOK the SECOND.

## C H A P. I.

*A council scene. The mildness of female government, with a remarkable instance of the happy effect of a proof upon great minds.* p. 119

## C H A P. II.

*A ready salve for a sore conscience, with a proper reward for piety. An unexpected disappointment for greatness of soul in a striking light. A day concluded consistently.* p. 123

C H A

## C H A P. III.

*More happy effects of greatness ; with a new way of punishing disobedience, and making the most of power.*  
p. 123

## C H A P. IV.

*Account of an uncommon kind of council ; with its natural conclusion.*  
p. 126

## C H A P. V.

*Mystery of favouritism. A remarkable instance of the art of making the most of a misfortune.*  
p. 131

## C H A P. VI.

*Continued. A mirrour for the female mind. Fear and resentment triumphant over love and virtue.*  
p. 135

## C H A P. VII.

*Mystery of favouritism concluded. The necessary effects of ridicule. Ministerial use of unlimited power ; with the natural consequence of ill-placed confidence.*  
p. 139

## C H A P. VIII.

*The scene changed. A national character. Another great man. Curious account of an inn, with an entertainment of political puffs.*  
p. 143

## C H A P. IX.

*Wheels within wheels. Certain great transactions deduced from unsuspected causes ; with the advantage of having two strings to a bow.*  
p. 147

## C H A P. X.

*More great matters. Home truths. A character out of nature; with a new definition of the laws of war; and a certain method of reducing a nation to obedience.*

p. 151

## C H A P. XI.

*A peep behind the curtain. Royal amusements; heroic principles and valour; with an approved shield against certain terrible dangers.*

p. 151

## C H A P. XII.

*Scene changed. Pleasant instance of the power of example. Grand attendance at a lady's toilet. Secretive favouritism.*

p. 151

## C H A P. XIII.

*Make hay while the sun shines. All go to the market whom they can have most for their money. A conversation concluded in character.*

p. 151

## C H A P. XIV.

*A curious, though not an uncommon picture. Play a trick properly, and you'll catch it. The fascination of vice.*

p. 151

## C H A P. XV.

*The scene changed. A pleasing prospect suddenly overcast. An easy way to get rid of a wrangler, with a comfortable plaster for a broken head. He that throws it always fouls his fingers.*

p. 151

## C H A P. XVI.

*A receipt for popularity. Turn a cast-horse to graze a common. The old steward acts the second part to the agent's farce. An hint by the bye.*

p. 151

C H A P.

## C H A P. XVII.

*An holiday, and a jolly day. A sumptuous feast, and a raree-show.* p. 184

## C H A P. XVIII.

*"Impresses quaint caparisons, and steeds;  
"Bases, and tinsel trappings; gorgeous knights,  
"Then marball'd feast  
"Serv'd up in hall, with sewers and seneschals.* p. 190

## C H A P. XIX.

*what the great are easiest to be imitated. This humble ambition more dangerous, if less ridiculous, in man than in woman. Another interview with a couple of old acquaintances.* p. 197

## C H A P. XX.

*that plays at Bowls must meet Rubs. The bitter DRUBB'D. An old fox caught napping. A penny saved is a penny got. Splendid economy; with the unfortunate candle adventure. A mortifying instance of the force of vanity.* p. 200

## C H A P. XXI.

*refining hints, which set some matters much canvassed in a new light.* p. 206

## C H A P. XXII.

*disputes will arise, where every man is for himself. A sure method of removing scruples, and reconciling opposite opinions. The character of the GRAND COMMANDER finished. The Conclusion.* p. 210



R

Flig

The sch  
stance  
Ever  
peace



sentime  
are n  
natur  
to es  
side,  
them  
it ne  
in a



THE  
REVERIE:  
OR, A  
Flight to the Paradise of Fools.

---

C H A P. I.

*The scheme changes with the scene. A remarkable instance of military equity. The soldiers view in war. Every man for himself, the rule in war as well as peace.*

HE feats of heroism, and the glory which, according to the general prejudices of mankind, I had been accustomed to associate with the idea of war, made me promise myself much pleasure from this change. The spirit read my sentiments in my looks, and smiling expressively, “ You are now going to take a view of scenes, (said he) the nature of which will make your utmost care requisite, to escape the illusions which surround them on every side, and are so strong as to deceive the very actors of them. The limitation of the human faculties makes it necessary, that objects should be presented to you in a regular succession; as that general view which

“ conveys

## THE REVERIE.

“ conveys knowledge intuitively to superior beings,  
“ would only dazzle your mind, and involve it in per-  
“ plexity and confusion. But this the more important  
“ duties of my office will not permit my attending to  
“ at present. I have already devoted as much time to  
“ your gratification as I can spare. You must therefore  
“ proceed alone, and make your own observations.  
“ For this reason it will be proper to place you im-  
“ mediately in the scene of action. Your attention  
“ will there be freed from the distraction of a more  
“ distant and complicated view; and you shall have  
“ other assistances, to remedy the inconvenience of my  
“ absence.” —— Saying this, he took my hand, and  
transported me, instantaneously, in the same manner as  
before, into the country which was the seat of the war.

High as my expectations had been, this nearer view  
of the paths of human glory chilled my soul. I turned  
my eyes away in horror; and in the instinctive impulse  
of affright, moved close to my guide for protection.  
“ I have often cautioned you (resumed he, in an ac-  
“ cent of reproof) against forming your judgment of  
“ any thing too precipitately. But now, you were  
“ delighted at the thought of this prospect. In a mo-  
“ ment, you sicken at the sight. Is this consistent  
“ with the character of a rational being? Your pre-  
“ sent fears of danger to yourself are as idly ground-  
“ less, as your hopes of receiving pleasure, from be-  
“ holding the miseries of others, were then unjustifi-  
“ able. I have told you, that your form is impercep-  
“ tible to human sense. It is also impassive to the  
“ injuries which affect mortality, under all the weak-  
“ ness and imperfections of which you see the beings  
“ before you labour, as strongly as when in your  
“ world. You may therefore mix with the multitude  
“ without apprehension, and make your remarks on  
“ every thing that occurs with deliberation and ease,  
“ to enable you to do which, I have freed your mind  
“ from the prejudices that have hitherto obstructed  
“ your reason, so that you will now behold all things  
“ in their genuine colours; and as some knowledge of  
“ the past lives of the persons concerned in the scene

you are going to enter into, may occasionally be necessary to explain their present actions, your faculties are enlarged with a power of looking back, and reviewing the whole series, as readily and distinctly as you do the objects recorded in your memory. Your motions also, as you are unincumbered with matter, depend absolutely on your will, by a single act of which you may transport yourself whithersoever you please in an instant; and so trace the most complicated transactions through all their intricate extent, from their obscure causes to their as unexpected conclusions, with precision and perspicuity. A right use of these advantages will give your curiosity the most rational satisfaction. Nor are you confined to any particular scene. When your soul is surfeited with war, and sickens at the thought of military glory, you are at liberty to seek new subjects of remark, through all the wide extent of human life, which is expanded to your view. One thing, though, I must caution you against; forget not that you are a mere unconcerned spectator of all the events you behold; nor presume on any account to interpose, be they ever so interesting to you. The least attempt of this kind will instantaneously deprive you for ever of the indulgence you now enjoy. I am summoned hence. When it is proper to reconduct you to the world of man, I will attend. Till then, observe the caution I have given you, and proceed without further limitation or restraint." — With these words he pished from my sight.

The first emotions of my surprize at being left in such a condition may be easily conceived. But they sted not long. I soon felt the advantages of the hours bestowed so liberally upon me; in the consciousness of which I lost all fear, and directly prepared to avail myself of them, in the most extensive manner. The more than martial animosity with which this war peared, by the desolation of the country, and the series of the inhabitants, to be carried on, made me include that it must have arisen from some most important cause. To learn this I directly entered into the army

army that lay nearest to me, where I imagined I should readily receive the information I wanted ; judging that every individual must be acquainted with the motives for a war in which he hazarded his life, and of course they must be the subject of the general conversation.

The army was composed of mercenaries of different nations hired by a foreign power, whose own subjects made a considerable part of it, tho' under the supreme command of one of the former ; and was led hither, into the country of an ally and friend, according to the rules of military equity, to defend the sovereign's own dominions from the invasion of an enemy, who with equal justice marched his forces to the indiscriminate oppression of friends and foes, through whose territories they passed, to wreak his vengeance on this part of his adversary's subjects, for injuries he imagined he had received from another, who were superior to his power, and with whom these had no connection in nature or interest, other than (in this case) the misfortune of being under the government of the same sovereign.

This general account I soon learned, and saw abundantly confirmed, both by the appearance of the army, and the manner of its proceeding ; but of the real origin of the war, or the end proposed by it, except *plunder* and *pay*, the soldiers appeared utterly ignorant, and indeed unconcerned about them, plodding mechanically to the field to fight, with as much indifference as oxen do to plough.

Shocked at an insensibility so disgraceful to beings who boast of the blessing of reason, I advanced to the commander, from whom I hoped to learn something satisfactory, in matters so immediately conducted by himself. He was sitting in his tent, at a table covered with dispatches he had just received from the country by which he was employed. When he had looked them over, with evident phlegm and disregard, " The people (said he) must think me as great a fool as themselves, to send me such orders ; orders which common sense might inform them I will not oblige. The people are out of humour, forsooth, at the length and expence of the war ; and so their masters want me to push it with more vigour."

“ bring it to a conclusion. But they will find themselves mistaken, I promise them. No! no! I will have no general actions; nothing that can possibly be decisive either way. That is not my business. The profits of my command are too considerable to be thrown away in that manner. If I should be beaten, they will instantly chuse another general, without ever considering that I only obeyed their own orders. And if I obtain a compleat victory, the war is at an end; and of course my profit also. No! No! I will have no decisive actions. While they are masters of a ducat to pay me, I will protract the war. When their money is all spent, they may go to battle as soon as they will; and whether they win or lose, is a matter of indifference to me. In the mean time, they shall have marching and skirmishing enough, to satisfy their passion for fighting, and prevent their complaining of idleness. I am commander in chief; and while I am, I will do just what I please, which is to promote my own interest as much as I possibly can. If I can manage matters so, as to hold my post for two or three campaigns more, I shall get money enough to support the dignity of my illustrious house with proper splendour. Nor is it possible for them to detect my design. The disproportion in numbers between my army and that of the enemy, is such as sufficiently justifies my cautious conduct; at the same time, that the difference in the appointments and goodness of the men secures me from danger of disgrace, and makes the glory I acquire in this defensive war cheaply earned. Indeed the greatest difficulty often is to divide their force, and direct their ardour in such a manner, as to prevent their defeating their enemies totally, against all disadvantages, and contrary to my intentions.”

## C H A P. II.

*A gilded bait to catch a gudgeon. The best cure for a matrimonial surfeit; with a new motive for entering into the military life.*

HAVING finished his meditations, he went out to a number of his officers, who attended at the entrance of his tent. His behaviour on this occasion shewed the masterly address with which he pursued his private scheme. To his own countrymen he spoke with the utmost indifference; and giving them some general orders about the duties of the camp, dismissed them slightly, and with an appearance of disesteem. But to the foreigners, by whose sovereign he was employed, he carried himself in quite a different manner. His eye wore a smile of familiarity and complaisance, whenever it met the meanest subaltern of the corps; and he scrupled not to compliment them, at the expence of the rest of the army, by proposing their example to general imitation.

So flattering a preference had the designed effect; the fatigues and dangers by which they acquired it were immediately forgot; and they even appeared eager to undertake more, to support so distinguished an honour.

The general saw, with secret pleasure, the ardour with which he had enflamed them; and resolved he would not let it cool for want of employment. Advancing to their particular commander, who just then joined him, " My dear friend (said he, with an air of the most cordial esteem) I have this moment received some intelligence, that enables me to give your brave countrymen an opportunity of signalizing that valour which has established them in the exalted reputation of being the best soldiers in the universe. You will select five thousand whom you think most proper, and let them be ready to march an hour before night. When you return from doing that, we will concert our measures, and fix on a person to carry them into execution. It is a master-stroke, and will

do honour to any officer ; for I cannot doubt of the success of an enterprize undertaken by your gallant countrymen."

The officer, who free from deceit himself, suspected none in any body else, heard him with the highest joy, and glowing with a passion for glory, which the general thus artfully fann'd, resolved, without even waiting to know the nature of the attempt, to take the command himself, and so reap all the honour. "Your Highness (answering he with evident emotion) does them honour by all your commands. I shall not have any occasion for selecting, where all are equally good, and equally ambitious of meriting your approbation. As for an officer for the command, I believe I can find one to whom, I hope, your Highness will have no objection."

Saying this, he proceeded directly to get every thing ready, while the rest of the army, instead of being offended at having the post of honour thus partially given to them, hugged themselves in the ease and safety enjoyed by the disgrace.

There was something so striking in the readiness with which the officer catched at the bait that was laid for him, that I became somehow anxious for the event, and resolved to observe him particularly through the day, and therefore followed him, when he went to receive the necessary orders to his men.

I had been surprized at the ardour he shewed, I was infinitely more so, to find that the same spirit ran through all his countrymen ; the very private soldiers, whose station might have been supposed to exempt them from the enthusiastic notions of honour which wealth and affluence inspire in the more exalted ranks, such a degree as to make men break through the law of nature, to run into danger with delight, *laying out* to a man, at the first mention of the matter, and vying with each other who should be of the party ; though the appearance of many of them shewed that they were already exhausted by fatigue, and wanted rest and refreshment, to restore their strength to a degree of equality with their spirit.

Among

Among men actuated by such an emulation, the least preference must have bred envy, and been attended with disagreeable consequences. Sensible of this, the officer thanked them all, in the most engaging manner, for their readiness; but said, that, according to the indispensable rule of military discipline, he must necessarily take those whose duty came in turn, consoling the rest with the thought that they could not long want an opportunity equally glorious of proving their spirit in an army, where they were honoured by the general with so peculiar a pre-eminence.

This delicate affair being adjusted, the heroes whose happy fortune it was to go prepared themselves with the highest emulation, while the others drew off with evident dejection at their disappointment.

As their leader rode along the lines, to take a particular view of them, observed that he addressed one of his subalterns, and was answered by him in a strain of familiarity, that seemed inconsistent with the distance between their stations. "Well, Tom, (said the former with a smile) this is a sudden call. How will *Venus* bear to have her *Mars* torn from her arms so soon? She ought to have a little longer time to reconcile her to the military life, before she is left by herself in a camp."

— "In a camp! No! no! I shall hardly let her in a camp."

— "No! What then do you design to do with her?"

— "Why, send her to indulge her meditations with her old friend, *Will Buck's* Lady. It will be good entertainment for them to compare notes."

— "But if you did not mean to keep her here, why were you at the trouble of bringing her? I imagined it was because you did not know how to part with her."

— "How to part with her! I thought you knew me better than to think so. Why, man, the contrary was the reason. If I did not desire to part with her, what should make me bring her here? No! No! It is not come to that with me yet. I turned soldier, at first, merely to get rid of

wife ; and I hope I may be allowed to take the same method to get rid of my mistress too, when I am equally tired of her. Beside, I have a better plea now than I had before. My honour, man ! My honour is engaged. I must not quit my colours upon any account, at such a time as this. If the fond charmer should take pet, and go home to her friends with her finger in her eye, to be revenged on her swain for his indifference, she has my sincere consent ; nor shall my best assistance be wanting to make an honest woman of her, by getting her a good husband. She has examples enough to keep her in countenance. But if the constant dove will not desert her roving mate, why, faith, I do not well know how to send her back against her will ; and must in compassion pay her a visit now and then ; though, by the bye, it shall be as seldom as possible, to give her company something like novelty ; which, in my opinion, is the only thing that can make the company of any woman tolerable."

—“ But won’t this be breaking faith with her ? I presume you must have made her very fine promises of love and constancy, before you could bring her to take such a step ? ”

—“ Promises ! Aye, promises enough for the matter of that ; but she was a fool if she believed them, when she had a proof that I should not keep them, before her eyes. She could not be so blindly vain, as not to know that novelty was the only advantage she had over my wife, whom I may probably return to by and by, for the same reason, when a campaign or two shall have sharpened my appetite. A campaign is the best remedy in nature for a matrimonial surfeit. It cures a man’s qualms, and sends him home as keen as a country-bridegroom.”

—“ But are you sure that she will leave you so readily ? The same spirit that enabled her to come to such a place as this, may dispute your authority to send her back. She has paid a dear price for your company, and may not chuse to give it up. Women, when once they love, have much more constancy in their temper than men.”

—“*Constancy!* Say rather, obstinacy. But I have taken care of that matter. I have wrote a letter to my wife, in which I made professions of the highest esteem, and desired the favour of her company, to compleat my happiness ; promising that *Chloe* and I would study her satisfaction and pleasure in every instance.”

—“*Good Heaven!* What could you propose by that ? You could never think she would be mean, or mad enough to accept of such an invitation ; an invitation, that only added insult to the ill-treatment you had given her before.”

—“*Accept of it !* No, I neither expected nor desired that. I had schemes of a very different kind in view. I know you have never suspected me for forming any deep designs ; but this will convince you of the contrary. This letter, little as you think of it, will serve two very important purposes. It will prevent my wife from obtaining a separate maintenance out of my estate ; for, as it is her duty to follow me wherever I please, she cannot now pretend that I have abandoned her : and on the other hand, it gives me an opportunity, at this, and any other time, to get rid of my mistress’s company, by telling her, that my invitation is accepted ; for she would fly to the extremity of the globe rather than meet her. *He !* What think you now ? Am not I a good politician ? Egad, I always mistook my talents ; if I had applied myself in time, I might have been prime minister before now. *Ha ! ha ! ha !*

—“*If you were conscious of this inconstancy in your temper, how came you to marry ?* That should have been the last thing I would have done.”

—“*That is very true.* But Sir *John Brute’s* son was mine. I wanted to go bed to her, and she would not consent on any other terms : the consequence of which was, that when my end was obtained, I grew tired of my bargain, and so turned soldier to get quit of it.”

—“*I am surprized to hear you say this.* I always understood that you had other motives for

“*you*

your military turn ; an ambition of command, and thirst for glory."

— " Very true. Glory and command are pretty things, to be sure ; but they are not equally the passion of all people. Your good look in losing your wife, made me hope that my turtle would have broken her heart, in the same manner ; but she was not so obliging ; and therefore I have tried this method of preferring another publickly to her. I know the force of female vanity ; and if this scheme should luckily succeed, I'll give up my hopes of a truncheon, and retire, as *Scipio* and other great men have done. If I once get my neck out of the yoke, I'll take care how I thrust it in again, or even enter into any connection that I cannot break when I please, without being obliged to have recourse to this expedient. No ! No ! I am not quite so fond of glory as you are. I can be content at home ; that is, when I am master of my own house."

— " Is it possible that you can be serious ? This is so contrary to the opinion of all your friends, that I must believe you only jest. Your birth and fortune give you a title to the highest employments in the state, in whatever capacity you chose to apply yourself ; and we all thought that preferring the military as the most honourable, you had come hither to qualify yourself for them."

— " Aye ! as you have done ! And pray, what are you the better ? In reward of all your fatigues and dangers, you have the honour to be put under the command of a foreigner, who would not presume to put himself upon a level with you in any other light ; and laughs at you in his sleeve, for your condescension. Very fine encouragement, truly ! No ! No ! Let the poor fight for pay, you and I want it not ; and all the real advantages of honour our ancestors, blessings on their memory for their pains, have transmitted to us. Let us then enjoy the happiness that is in our possession, and not the substance thus to grasp at the shadow."

The other, who had listened to him before with contempt, was so struck with the latter part of his discourse,

discourse, that he rode away abruptly to avoid hearing any more of it.

---

## C H A P. III.

*A toilet set out in a new taste. The advantage of knowing how to play one inconvenience against another; with an interesting instance of love and honour in the modern style.*

**T**HIS extraordinary conversation raising my curiosity to see the fair female who had originally been the subject of it, I followed her lover, while his leader was preparing for his expedition.

She was sitting alone in his tent, in a situation not easy to be described. Educated in the lap of luxury, she had multiplied the wants of nature ten-thousand-fold; and required assistance every moment for necessities created by caprice. Though her lover's fortune placed her above the real distresses of such a place, and supplied her with most of the conveniences, as well as all the necessaries of life, she had numberless artificial occasions, which habit had made in a manner indispensible to her, and which, as it was impossible to provide for then, in such a vague unsettled state, she exerted as much contrivance to supply, as had first enabled human ingenuity to find out the most important conveniences of life; though with this essential difference, that as the end was fantastic here, the means necessarily appeared ridiculous.

We found her at her toilet, which was a sumptuous trunk, set upon one end, and covered with a foul shirt. On this she had placed a pocket-mirror, and on each side of that a row of phials, and gallipots filled with colours, cosmetic paste and washes, which she always carried about her. Her combs and brushes were set out on the saucers she had just been using at breakfast. Her shoes and stockings lay on the bed, which was also her seat; and to wash herself she made use of an utensil, which had been placed under it for another occasion. With this apparatus, all set in form, she

as attentively busy at the important work of dressing, as if she was going to make her appearance at a wing-room. Her lover's entrance interrupted her. Fie, *Damon*, (said she blushing at the ridiculous figure she made) how can you intrude so rudely into a lady's ruelle? You see I have set out my toilet. The bed and the trunk serve for every thing. Dumb waiters are sometimes most convenient, Ha! ha! ha!

The moment I saw her, I could perceive that this quiet was all affected; that, sick at heart, she flew to quiet for relief from the torture of reflection. Such a quiet was sufficient to raise compassion in any mind not utterly lost to every sense of humanity, as well as virtue. She was just entered into the prime of life; her form elegant and striking; and her features, if not faultlessly beautiful, yet glowing with such luxuriant health, such animated sensibility, as had the effect of the most perfect beauty. But in her present situation, all these charms appeared to disadvantage. A gloom of consciousness's guilt overcast her smiles; and amidst all her mirth and endearments, she was ashamed to look up, and meet the eye of the very author of her shame.

When she had forced out the laugh with which she concluded the above speech, her *Damon*, smiling with an air of indifference, "Necessity is the mother of invention, my dear *Chloe*; (said he) and yours seems to have been well set to work. But I come to tell you some news that I fear will interrupt you. I am ordered out upon action directly; and as it is like to be a warm affair, I think it is better to provide for your safety before I go, for fear of any thing's happening to me. You would be horribly at a loss by yourself, in such a place as this, if I should be killed.

She started at the mention of action; but his last words struck her with terrors too strong for her to bear. For some moments she stood like the statue of terror, unable to move or speak; but her very fears length gave her utterance. "Good heaven! (exclaimed she) what do you mean? What action can you be ordered into that would endanger your life?

" Did

“ Did not you promise me, that you would quit this  
“ accursed life directly? Did you not prevail upon  
“ me to come here with you, only that you might  
“ lay down your commission without disrepute? You  
“ cannot, shall not, think of going into any action!  
“ You must come away this moment.”

—“ That was my design, my dear, if it had not  
“ been for this unlucky affair; but now it is impossible  
“ for me to stir. If I return, I will that moment lay  
“ down; but I cannot possibly do it sooner. It would  
“ be an eternal blot upon my honour.”

—“ Honour! (returned she, with a sigh, that  
“ seemed to burst her heart) How can you mention  
“ that word to me? If you are resolved to go, I will  
“ wait the event here. Should you be brought back  
“ wounded, my care may not be unnecessary! If  
“ worse should happen, the horrors I shall suffer! If  
“ I receive the account, will compleat my aversion to  
“ life, and make me glad to follow you. I have now  
“ no business in this world without you.”

The agony in which she said this would have melted any other heart; but he felt it not. Finding her proof to this argument, he therefore had recourse to his last expedient. “ I am much obliged to you, my dear, (said he, quite unmoved) for your kind intentions to take care of me; but I hope I shall not want it. Beside there is another thing, which embarrasses me a good deal. I have just received an account, that my wife, out of her exemplary love and duty, has accepted my invitation, and is coming to us directly.”

—“ To us! (answered she, alarmed almost to distraction) Is it possible? What shall we do? Where shall I fly? I never can, never will see her. I had rather die ten thousand deaths than look her in the face.”

—“ To be sure, I allow it must be rather absurd; but the mischief is I cannot tell how you will avoid it, if you stay here.”

—“ You must write to her peremptorily, the moment not to come; and when you leave the place

place, take a different route from what you intended, for fear she should not obey you."

— "Aye! but the worst is, I don't know where to direct to her. She set out immediately, on receipt of my letter; and as the post is obliged to come so far about, for fear of being intercepted by the enemy, and she travels with passports the shortest way, she may be here this evening, for ought I know: and then it would be so gross an abuse not to see her, even after her undergoing the fatigue of such a journey, at my express desire, that I cannot avoid waiting for her. Decency at least must be observed."

— "Decency! How can you insult me by mentioning such a word? I slighted that, and every thing else, for you. Had I paid any regard to decency, I should not have been here now in this condition."

— "Nay, for the matter of that, my dear, I am not much behind you. I shewed as little respect to those things for your sake as you could for mine. But let us not enter into fruitless disputes. What are you resolved to do? for I must march within this hour."

— "Honour! decency! But I am justly served. What am I resolved to do? Say rather what you intend to do with me, and do not torture me any longer in this manner; for I see plainly enough, that my presence is a pain, which you want to get rid of at any rate. Honour! just heaven!"

— "Why, child, if you are determined to think so, it is in vain to reason with you. You shall do just as you please; either go or stay. What I meant to propose was this: You remember your old friend, who took a frolick with *Will Buck* two or three years ago. She lives in a very pretty retired manner, in a neutral town, about twenty miles from hence. Now, if you approve of it, it would be no bad scheme for you, to go and pay her a visit, till we see how things go. I am sure she will be very well pleased to see you; and there you will be free from the inconveniencies, and safe from the dangers of a camp; and near enough for me to step to you as often as I can spare a moment. I'll write

“ a letter to *Will* about it directly ; and as I know his finances are not in the best situation, I make no doubt but he'll be very glad of your staying there as long as you please ; for you shall have money enough to bear all the expence. I would not let you be under obligation to any one. Well, what think you of my scheme ? Was it not a lucky thought ? You and she were very intimate formerly, and will now be the most proper and agreeable companions for each other.”

It is impossible to describe the different passions which were painted in her face, while he was making this proposal. She knew him too well to take such a rational scheme for a sudden thought ; and concluded from thence that he was satiated with her company, and had formed a premeditated design to get rid of her ; to facilitate which he had first made a pretence of his being ordered into action, and when that did not take effect, forged this story of his wife's coming, for notwithstanding her distress, she had observed the many inconsistencies in what he said. However, her pride would not permit her to discover her suspicions, as it would look like striving to force herself longer upon him.

“ When you are resolved (answered she with a most expressive look) I have nothing left but to obey. Give orders for my going, I shall soon be ready. All places are indifferent to me, and all companions equally disagreeable. My own thoughts will afford me company enough. I leave you to yours.”

— “ My dearest girl, (replied he, more pleased at her compliance than affected at the manner of it) what I propose is for the best. I only study your convenience and satisfaction. If you can think of any other way, I am ready to do it.”

— “ I have no power to think ! I wish I never could ! But let me be gone. I have staid too long already. Let me not interfere with your regard to decency and honour” — Saying this, she directly huddled on her travelling habit, while he went to order his chaise to the door of his tent.

When  
cessary  
fence  
we and  
emptuo  
ve he  
raise th  
making  
The s  
ntly ra  
t long  
e got i  
tears  
tress ;  
mpany  
rugged  
gging  
s comm  
ar ! H  
think t  
ful of  
gence.  
H  
I th  
th the  
nder,  
neral t  
The n  
d, disa  
th the  
I am  
which  
person  
mand  
— “  
jection

When he had done this, he returned to give her some necessary instructions for her journey, and palliate the fence he had given her, by caresses and professions of love and constancy. She heard him with the most contemptuous silence; and taking a purse of gold, which he gave her, with an air of indignation flung into the chaise the moment it arrived, without speaking a word, making the least return to his fondness.

The spirit which she shewed on this occasion was evidently raised by resentment; and of course could not last long. Indeed she was scarce able to support it till she got into the chaise, where she melted into a flood of tears before she was out of sight. Her lover saw her distress; but the joy he felt at being freed from her company, prevented his feeling any concern at it. He rugged up his shoulders in self-complacency; and, sitting himself on his deliverance, prepared to attend his commander at the appointed hour.

---

## CHAP. IV.

*War! Horrid war! They'll never want employment who think themselves well paid for their pains with a mouthful of moon-shine. The great channel of secret intelligence.*

HERE was something so deliberately base in the whole conduct of this person, that I left him with the highest contempt, and returned to his commander, who was by this time ready to wait upon the general to receive his orders.

The moment he entered the tent, the general arose, and, dismissing every other person present, received him with the highest respect. " Well, my friend, (said he) I am now ready to communicate to you the plan which I have formed; but it will be proper that the person for whom you design the honour of the command should be present."

" He is present, if your highness makes no objection to him. I know that all your plans are

“ formed with judgment ; and as your more than usual earnestness about this shews it to be of importance, shall be proud of having the execution of it entrusted to my care.”

— “ You, my friend ! I know not what to say ; I cannot spare you from my side. I want your advice every moment. At the same time, I am unwilling to rob you of an opportunity of acquiring so much glory. Here is the intelligence I have received, and here is the scheme I laid down upon it. You will examine them, and alter any thing you don’t approve, as circumstances may require. To you I give a discretionary power, to act as you see proper. Had I known you would have gone, I should not have drawn any particular directions. Go ; and success await you.”

The other received this distinguished mark of confidence and favour with the highest pleasure ; and, taking leave of the general, hastened away to join his troops, who were by this time drawn out ready to march. As soon as he had taken a view of them, he opened his instructions ; and looking them over, put himself at the head of his men, with whom he marched all night, through woods and morasses deemed impassible, and at day-break found himself just before a quarter of the enemy, who confiding in the distance and natural strength of their situation, had neglected to fortify themselves, and expected nothing less than to be attacked.

The difficulties of the march had fatigued his troops to such a degree, that it appeared next to madness to let them attack an enemy greatly superior to them in number. But their ardour was such, that they despised every advantage, and demanded to be instantly led on. The proper improvement of that enthusiasm is generally decisive. The commander therefore indulged their impetuosity, confiding in their valour, and convinced that his safety and success equally depended upon surprize ; if he failed of which, it would be absolutely impossible for him even to make a retreat in the condition they were in, through such difficulties as they had struggled with in coming.

Scenes like this are impossible to be particularly described. Accustomed to conquer, they made their onset with a resolution that bore down all before them. In the confusion unavoidable on such occasions, their enemies fled at the first impulse, imagining they were attacked by the whole army, while the victors made an heavy slaughter of all who had no time to escape.

Had they stopped here, the advantage would have been important. But hurried on by their natural ardour, and flushed beside with success, they pursued the fugitives, who by this time had recovered from their first surprize, and formed upon an eminence, not very far from their late camp. The action now was really dreadful. The assailants were several times repulsed with severe loss, and owed their success at last to an effort of meer despair, being determined, to a man, to die rather than have their victory snatched thus out of their hands.

Their loss in this affair equalled that of their enemies, in the surprize of their entrenchments, and amounted to more than half their number; but they remained masters of the field, the honour of which they looked upon as a recompence for all.

On their return to the army the general met them, and embracing the leader, congratulated him on the glory of his victory; and *thanking* the men, in the orders of the day, sent them away happy; while he pleased himself with the success of his scheme, which gave him the appearance of doing something, flattered his employers with imaginary advantages, and raised his merit with them; at the same time, that in reality it served rather to protract than determine the war, by inspiring each party with a desire of revenging so equal a loss. However, it was deemed sufficient by him to be made the subject of congratulatory messages to the sovereign under whom he served, and all the powers confederate with him.

I was so sick of this mercenary method of making war, by which the miseries of that scourge of mankind were so highly aggravated, that I resolved to quit this army directly, and see whether that of the enemy,

opposed to it, was conducted in a more rational manner.

I have said that my guide had given me power to transport myself, by a bare act of my will, wherever pleased. Though this was necessarily a great advantage in many instances, there were yet some circumstances attending it, which made me chuse to decline making use of it, except upon extraordinary occasions. The instantaneous transition from one scene to another, distant and unconnected, was so unusual to me, that it left a chasm in my mind, and made me for some time at a loss to comprehend the things before me, for want of the introduction of entering gradually into them. This I had experienced more than once, when at any time my guide used to turn my eye suddenly, and without some previous preparation, to any new scene in the review I made under his immediate direction. For this reason I resolved, when it was possible, to take the opportunity of accompanying some person, wherever I had a mind to go, whose business would serve as a clue to introduce and direct me without perplexity or confusion; by which method I had also the advantage of observing several things worthy of notice, in the countries through which I passed, which would have escaped me, had I only flew over them in the other way.

For such a guide and companion I was not long at a loss. The general that very evening held a council of war, the resolutions of which two of the members could not refrain from talking over that night, after supper. Not suspecting that they were overheard, they canvassed all that had passed very freely, and in the course of their conversation mentioned several matters of the greatest importance to be kept secret. This the valet de chambre of him in whose tent they were, was not inattentive to. He was a native of the enemy's country, and retained by them to procure intelligence of every thing that happened in the army where he was. Accordingly he placed himself where he could distinctly hear all that was said; and pretending sleep, to avoid the danger of detection, listened to their discourse with the greatest attention.

As soon as they separated, and he had put his master to bed, he wrote an exact account of all that he had overheard; and giving his letter to one of his associates, who passed for no more than a common purveyor to the camp, charged him to deliver it as directed with the utmost expedition, as it was of the highest importance; and this experienced person I resolved to accompany.

## C H A P. V.

*The longest way about is often the nearest way home. The pleasure of comparing notes creates friendship in affliction. A new species of knight-errantry.*

THE armies lay so near to each other that my guide might soon have performed his errand, could he have gone directly with safety. Instead of that, to avoid every suspicion, he took diametrically the contrary way, designing, when he should be out of danger of being observed, to make a turn, and go by a safer though more distant course.

I shall not attempt to describe the country through which we travelled. Could the most ambitious power that ever waged war view such a scene with the dispassionate eye of reason but for one moment, it would strike his heart with horror, and make him desist from pursuits so destructive to his kind.

The first place we stopped at happened to be the town to which the officer had sent his mistress, as I have said before, under a pretext of her avoiding his wife. I should have taken notice, that in the course of the action he had often repented of not taking her advice, and wished himself to be in safety with her; though when it was over, his heart exulted so much in the success, that for some time he could think of nothing but war and glory. Indeed his behaviour had been such as in a great measure recovered the esteem of his leader; and with the rest of the army, who have a partiality for the indulgence of passion, and are par-

ticularly smitten with the more shewy virtues, totally obliterated his reproach.

As we entered the town, I accidentally saw her at a window, and my fellow traveller stopping for refreshment, I took that opportunity to see how she liked her present situation. When I joined her, she and her friend were going to take a walk in the garden.

There was something particularly striking in the appearance of the latter. Tho' she had never been a regular beauty, and now had lost a good deal of the bloom of youth, it was impossible for man to behold her without desire; at the same time, that the fire which flashed from her eyes shewed that she felt all the passions she inspired. A similarity in their circumstances had very soon improved their former acquaintance into that degree of intimacy which is commonly called friendship. When they were seated in an arbour at the bottom of the garden, "I wonder, madam, (said the lady of the house) that you had no account from your friend, since this action. Public report says it was very warm; but as no particular mention is made of him, it is certain he has come off safe. Officers of his rank are never overlooked."

"Indeed, madam, (answered the other) I know not what to attribute it to but the levity that rules all his actions. I am out of his sight, and consequently out of his mind. But I have no right to complain. I deserved it all and more, for being such a dupe to my own vanity and his base designs, as to think I could fix one whose soul is inconstancy itself. My eyes are at length opened to my folly. I deserve to be slighted thus and deserted in a strange place."

— "Have patience, dear madam! Do not seek for imaginary grievances. It is impossible he can desert you. No man can be so insensible as to slight such charms. The hurry of war is above our conception, and often prevents the performance of the duties dearest to the heart."

— "O my friend! you are too good to seek consolation for a wretch just sinking into despair. But it is all in vain. What business had he with war?"

"His

" His fortune placed him above the common motive of necessity ; and he assured me that he was sick of the folly of ambition, and would retire to some private place in Italy, where we should be unknown, and there dedicate his life to love and happiness. But no sooner had he obtained his base ends, than he changed his scheme ; and feigning I know not what reasons about laying down his commission with credit, and such idle stuff, he led me hither, just to shew me about, and make the shame of my being cast off the more notorious and mortifying, perhaps to enhance its merit, and prepare the way for a reconciliation with his wife, which his writing her that letter gives me a sufficient ground to think he is not without thoughts of."

— " For shame, dear madam ! summon up your resolution, and do not torture yourself with such vain, such impossible apprehensions. I know your good sense, and would not flatter you. A reconciliation with his wife is an absurd thought. Not that I think it at all improbable, on her part. The soft nature of our sex can forgive any thing ; but the difficulty lies in himself. After giving her such treatment, he can never forgive her, can never believe she is sincerely reconciled ; and therefore will hate her for her hypocrisy, and be always in fear of some secret revenge. Or, even if she should convince him to the contrary, the contrast between her conduct and his, will be so mortifying to him, and give her such a superiority in his own eyes, that he will never be able to bear it ; and must avoid her presence, to preserve his own peace. This, my dear, is your security against this worst misfortune possible to happen to a woman. Shame, poverty, any thing, were preferable to being slighted for a wife."

— " What an infatuated creature was I to bring myself into this state, that my happiness must depend on such a base foundation ? Happiness did I say ? It is misery ; the severest misery. The constant anxiety and fears inseparable from such a state of uncertainty, are worse than any actual misfor-

“ tune. But I deserve it all. I am inexcuseable in the eyes of the world, and odious in my own. But what will not the baseness of man and the folly of woman do ?

—“ The base artifices of man to obtain his ends, and his shameless perfidy after, should be a warning to our sex ; but *Nature is nature let the wife say what they will* ; and while woman has vanity and desires, man will take advantage of the former, to flatter her into the gratification of the latter. You have this consolation, however, that your case is not singular. I do not say example justifies a wrong action ; but still it certainly is a satisfaction to think that others have fallen into as great errors as ourselves ; that we are not the worst of our kind. All the folly that you upbraid yourself for have I been guilty of, and with this severe aggravation, that the person for whom I made such a sacrifice was not in circumstances even to delude me with the romantic schemes of happiness, which helped to turn your head, but was forced by necessity to apply himself to the horrid trade of war for subsistence ; so that the pain of his absence, and the fear of losing him, were heightened by the dreadful apprehension of being reduced to dependence on the friends, whose resentment I had so justly provoked, if any thing should happen to him. Yet all this have time and reflection reconciled me to, and taught me to submit without regret to a fate which I can't remedy.

“ But let us drop this disagreeable and fruitless subject. My intercourse with my native country is so little, that I had not even heard of your affair till my friend sent me the pleasing account of the honour designed me by your company ; and then, without any particular circumstances, which he either was unacquainted with, or had not time to write. As I imagine there must be something uncommon and interesting in them, I shall esteem it a favour if you will indulge me with the relation ; and to encourage that confidence, I will candidly inform you of every thing concerning myself, the account

“ of

“ of which, I know, has been greatly and most cruelly misrepresented ; and if you do not find much entertainment in it, you certainly will ample consolation from a comparison of my case with yours. Not that all my adventures have been barren of matter ; for the former also, now that the danger and ridicule which attended them at the time, are over.

“ You seem surprised, my dear, at my mentioning my adventures ; but ours is literally a life of adventure ; and the moment a woman takes the step that we have done, she as it were commences knight-errant, and sallies forth, if not to seek, at least subject to meet adventures wherever she goes ; every man who thinks it worth his while assuming a right to make his attacks upon her in what manner he pleases.”

---

## C H A P. VI.

*History of a remarkable lady. The great benefit of polite education, with the force of good example. Common occurrences of various kinds, and their natural consequences.*

“ **T**H E R E is nothing more absurdly ungenerous than the invectives levelled at our sex indiscriminately, and without inquiring into the nature of our faults, and making just allowances for the causes leading, or rather indeed impelling us to them.

“ The youth of man is devoted to profitable instruction ; but that of woman to initiation into the paths of ruin. While they are acquiring the general principles of knowledge, or learning some profession for the exercise and advancement of their future lives, we are taught nothing but trifles useless in themselves, and if not immediately criminal, yet leading indirectly to every crime, by turning the mind upon wrong pursuits, and weakening all its powers by an habit of idleness, impossible ever to be broken through ; for idleness, my dear friend, is the bane of woman, let her attribute her failings to whatever other apparent cause she will.

“ The

“ The most important part of my story may be comprised in a few words. You are acquainted with my family, and the particular circumstances of it, which made my situation more critically dangerous even than that of the generality of my sex; a danger that was still heightened by other circumstances peculiar to myself, and which, far from being attended to in that light, and guarded against with proper care, were looked upon as advantages, and accordingly urged to their utmost force.

“ Born in a rank that placed all the pleasures of life within my reach, and blessed with a constitution equal to the enjoyment of them, I seemed marked out for the attacks of man; the luxuriance of my health kindling all the passions of nature, before reason could gather strength to guide and keep them within proper bounds, and the liberties allowed by fashion giving every opportunity for their gratification. Such an aptitude for pleasure was also forwarded, where it should have met with restraint,

“ There are some persons our relation to whom makes respectful mention of them a duty, be their conduct what it will. I shall therefore only say that, instead of instilling the principles of virtue by precept, and enforcing its practice by example, that person, whose example and precepts must have had the greatest weight with me, exerted them quite the contrary way, turning every thing serious into ridicule, and indulging every licentious passion in the most public manner. The consequence, with regard to me, may be easily concluded. Inclined by nature to pleasure, I willingly imitated the pattern set me as far as was in my power, and launched into every excess, as opportunity tempted; and if I paid greater regard to appearances, and conducted myself with more reserve, it was not from any restraint of principle; but because I saw that fashion did not authorise the same boundless liberty in youth, as it did in more advanced life.

“ But this reserve soon began to be very uneasy to me, and the pleasures I enjoyed, to be confined within narrower limits than I liked. Ripened, as I have said, by the luxuriance of my constitution, I felt all the warmth

armest passions of my sex before it was imagined that my tender youth was capable of such sensations, and was treated like a child long after I thought myself a woman. The difficulties this laid me under were often very disagreeable. I made every explanation that was not a direct breach of decency, and gave hints which would have been readily understood from any one of a more advanced age. But, to my severe mortification, all was attributed to meer imitation; and Miss was significantly said to echo her mama's words, when she could much rather have practised her actions.

" At length, however, I was relieved from thisazing situation, by one of those accidents which determine the fate of human life. As I was sitting one evening at an assembly, fretting myself to death to see several ladies, whom I looked upon as my inferiors in every thing but age, taken out before me, an officer, who read my thoughts and was resolved to have some amusement with me, came up to the place where I sat, and entering into chat with a young lady who was with me, led her to ask him if he did not design to dance; upon which turning to me with an air of the most respectful politeness, he answered that he would, if I would him the favour to be his partner.

" Such a preference, though to one of my most intimate acquaintances, (for the manner in which she had asked the question was a plain offer to dance with him self,) was too pleasing to be slighted. I assented most readily, and in the height of my spirits at my triumph, gave such plain hints of the state of my inclinations, that he soon comprehended them; and being somewhat warm with wine, made advances to me which I had long wished for, but never received before.

" The impression made upon us by a first application was hard to be resisted. For my part, I was too much infatuated with it to make the attempt; and really felt all that warmth he professed, met his wishes more than half way. In such a life as I led, and to persons disposed, opportunity could not long be wanted; and when my lover came in a cooler moment to reflect on the consequences of an intrigue with one of my age and

and rank, should it ever happen to be discovered, prudence damped the ardour of his passion, and prevented his carrying the conquest he had made to the height of our mutual desires. But though he deferred it for the present, he did not absolutely give up the design, when circumstances should wear a more favourable aspect.

" In families like ours, every person who dressed well and would play had ready admission. He availed himself of this, and under the appearance of paying compliment to my mother, took every opportunity of attending me to all places of pleasurable resort.

" The difference of our age, and particularly his being married, obviated every suspicion of his intentions, as they should have opened my eyes to the infamy and folly of carrying on such a correspondence. But I was incapable of considering any thing beside the pleasure I felt in his company, which was evidently sincere, that, beyond his design, it affected him, and began also to feel the passion he had only professed before.

" Though he conducted himself with the utmost circumspection and address, it was impossible to keep up such an intercourse long without the real motive of it being suspected. The first hint of this alarmed the pride of my relations, though the original cause had not been thought worthy of their regard. They instantly assailed me with expostulations and reproaches as they did my lover with menaces; but all in vain.

" There is nothing more injudicious than to discover a suspicion of what it is not absolutely in our power to prevent. It takes off the restraint of shame, and raises a false resentment that urges the crime in revenge of the injurious accusation. Instead of working the effect my friends designed, this conduct only hastened the consequence which they meant to hinder. Finding they could not themselves break off the intercourse between us, though they knew not certainly to what length it had been carried, they had recourse to superior authority, and prevailed to have my lover sent on an expedition, from which it was more than probable that he would never return; or at least if he did

ust be after such a length of time as they doubted  
t would wean my affections from him, and fix them  
some other more proper object.

" But all their schemes were disappointed. The  
pedition miscarried, and he returned before they  
agned he had even reached the place of his destina-  
tion; and far from being cooled in our mutual regards  
abience, they rather gathered strength to break out  
th greater violence.

" For some time, however, we observed so much  
ution as to save appearances at least, let suspicions  
what they would. But a gardener surprising us one  
ening in an arbour, when we thought ourselves safe  
m observation, though the fellow was highly bribed  
secrecy, we thought it imprudent to depend on him;  
y lover therefore threw up his commission, and we  
mediately eloped together out of the reach of my  
ends resentment, who, we were well convinced,  
ould leave nothing undone to be revenged on the  
n who had thrown such a public scandal on their  
mily.

" I now thought my happiness compleat, and giving  
oose to love, despised the censure of the world, and  
ked no farther than the present moment. But a lit-  
time made a change in my sentiments, and I began  
anguish for the other pleasures which I had forfeited  
the step I had taken.

" I would not by this intimate any uncommon alte-  
ion in my lover's behaviour; but the joy of novelty  
s worn off, desire was satisfied, and reflection began  
obtrude upon us. Our situation necessarily pre-  
ded us from society, at least any that could afford us  
satisfaction, and confined us to each other; and when  
tumult of passion began to subside, as we dared  
apply to reason for relief, time grew tedious,  
we mutually sighed for variety, to give a relish  
n to pleasure. The effect this had upon our tem-  
s heightened our unhappiness. Unable to look  
ourselves for the real cause, each accused the  
er of inconstancy and want of love; and these re-  
aches, instead of removing the complaint, were be-  
ing to aggravate a coolness that was unavoidable,  
into

into determined dislike and aversion: for, my dear, in us in the warmth of youthful imagination flatter ourselves with what notions we will of eternal constancy and unalterable love, sense will soon be fatigued and languish for variety, if reason does not lend its assistance to fill up the dull pause of passion. With us the consequence was obvious, as our connexion depended entirely upon ourselves. But before we had time to resolve absolutely on a separation, an event happened which removed the immediate cause of our disgust, and awoke all our former tenderness.

### CHAP. VII.

*Continued. An unusual effect of absence. The loss of reputation sometimes inconvenient. Reflections on a qualification which all pretend to, and few possess; with a curious account of a man of consequence.*

“ I HAVE observed to you that my lover had a fortune; all his hopes even depending on his military profession. The manner in which he had come away with me cutting off these for ever in his own country, necessity obliged him to seek employment among strangers. This the tumult of my thoughts had made me overlook, at the time when it was in my own power to have prevented the consequences of it. But think what a state I must have been in when the hour of his departure came! I look back to it with horror even now when use has made his absence familiar to me, and softened many of the inconveniences of it.

“ Without the conversation of a friend, to beguile the tedious melancholy hours, and blunt the sting of grief; without the approbation of my own mind, to sweeten thought and make reflection a pleasure, I was left a stranger in a strange place; and, what was the worst of all, every morsel I eat imbibited by the dreadful consideration, that it was earned at the instant of the life dearest to me in the world; for the first thought of our parting removed all that wearied

which had been the cause of our disgust, and the occasion of it doubly endeared us, by shewing how much had given up, how much more we hazarded for each other.

Our parting exceeded the power of description. After the first transports of my grief were over, I sunk into a state of insensibility, and grew absolutely indifferent to myself and every thing about me, fixing my thoughts entirely on the days which were to bring me account from him, and living only for their arrival.

At length lenient time began to administer its ne-  
-failing relief; and youth and health united their  
powers to dissipate a gloom so contrary to my natural  
position; I gradually recovered my spirits, and felt  
again a relish for the pleasures of society. But these  
pleasures were very different from those which I had  
formerly delighted in. My mind had learned to think,  
and I had had time to view things in another light from  
that in which they had appeared before. My affections,  
true, were still the same, invariably fixed upon my  
friend, and all the wishes of my heart centered in him;  
but justly though I did not dare to consider, holding  
any thing that concerned him too sacred to be even  
dared into.

These wishes indeed were of a much more extensive and exalted kind, than those which had given rise to our connexion. You may have observed that I call him my *friend*. From this time, I looked upon him in that light; and if not entirely in that alone, the very idea of friendship with love was the highest movement to the latter, and in a great measure屏  
shielded it from every gross alloy.

The effect this had upon my mind is scarce to be conceived; I was not incapable of thought; but I had not given myself time to think. The moment therefore that I began, I found a pleasure in it which cannot be conceived; every hour brought me knowledge, which made me both surprised at, and ashamed of, my former blindness and ignorance; I read in my own heart, though unhappily too late, all the wisdom necessary for the conduct of life. I thus literally became a new creature; and on my emersion from the solitude

solitude in which I had buried myself since my friend's departure, sought the company (and flatter myself that I was not unworthy of it) of the most valuable part of the sex.

" But I soon had the mortification to find myself excluded from this pleasing hope. Retired and unexceptionably as we had lived, the circumstances of our elopement had somehow been discovered; so that when I appeared in company, instead of meeting the reception I had fondly expected, my advances toward intimacy were repulsed by my own sex, and I found myself exposed to the familiarity and libertine addresses of the other, who always lay it down as a rule, that a woman who has broken thro' the laws of virtue with one man has entirely thrown off all farther regard to them, and is a fair quarry for general pursuit.

" You may easily judge what a shock this was to me. I now began to feel the inestimable loss of reputation and returned to my former retirement with an heart bursting with disappointment, shame and remorse. I was not suffered long to enjoy the peace I sought there. My new admirers pursued me, and in spite of all I could say persisted in their gallantry; and that ten in a manner too gross to have been offered to but a professed prostitute.

" Had this happened some time sooner, I should have instantly written to my friend, to come to my rescue from such insolent abuse; but my thoughts had taken a new turn, and I dreaded nothing more than coming to his knowledge, for fear of any ill consequences to himself from the warmth of his temper, who knew would be provoked to the highest rage at such an attempt. For this reason I resolved to take no notice of it to him, but behave in such a manner to my admirers as should make them ridiculous even in their own eyes.

" Habits long confirmed are not easily broken through by the best resolutions. I had a natural heat of temper; and the critical nature of my intercourse with my friend before our elopement, laid under a kind of necessity of practising coquetry in my general conduct, in hopes of covering my partial connexions.

nnexion with him I will therefore take shame to  
self, and confess that in my present solitary condi-  
, the prospect of amusement, in playing off their fool-  
addresses, had some weight with me in this design ;  
ever considering that such a conduct was inconsistent  
with the principles in which I now prided myself, and  
most inevitably disappoint my hopes of recovering the  
repute of the prudent and virtuous of my own, and  
natural part of the other sex.

" I see you are affected with this melancholy de-  
ail; but my heart was so full that I could not stop its  
erflowing. I shall now conclude with one of the  
many adventures which this new scheme of mine pro-  
duced, the oddity of which will probably restore you  
spirits.

" The persons who thought proper to do me the  
honour of declaring themselves my admirers were of  
every age and rank in the place. As they had dis-  
covered the nobility of my birth, they all thought it in-  
evitable upon them to display their utmost politeness  
in the manner of making their addresses. Though eve-  
ry country has peculiar customs which constitute the  
rule of behaviour, true politeness is essentially the same  
every where, and differs only in the external modes of  
expressing it. The mechanical part, as I may justly  
call it, which consists in cringes and compliments, may  
easily be learned ; but the unembarrassed ease and pro-  
fidence of address and deportment, which denote  
the character at first sight, and that desire to  
please, which pleases in its very appearance,  
must have a foundation from nature, in a benevolent  
and generous disposition, and be confirmed by early  
education and long practice. The latter indeed may  
be an habit that shall deceive a superficial view ; but  
where the former is wanting, the judicious observer  
soon discover and despise the imposture.

I had abundant experience of the justice of this  
mark in the behaviour of my new admirers. Had I  
nothing more than meer common amusement in my  
thoughts, this would have afforded me sufficient ; but  
the want of restraint at their impudence made me determined to  
push

push their folly to its utmost length, and then expose it to public ridicule.

" The few who really possessed that politeness which all aped, soon perceived, by the manner of my receiving their advances, that they were disagreeable to me, and accordingly they desisted from giving me any further trouble. But their awkward imitators in the tertiaries of good-breeding, forming their judgment of me from themselves, construed my complaisance into approbation, and thought I was pleased with what they said, because I did not directly fly into an outrage; but when I had taken time to look into the characters, and see which was fittest for my purpose to work upon, I gave the rest their dismissal, in the manner most like to take effect.

" Among the selected few whom I permitted to flatter themselves with hopes of success was an burgher, who had made an immense fortune by an iniquitous practice in the mysterious business of a contractor, for supplying the armies of the powers at war with provisions. Though he was sprung from the very dregs of mankind, and had passed his youth in the most sordid and servile employments, his heart was puffed up by his riches, that he must on all occasions assume the man of birth and good-breeding. That own base disposition made it impossible for him to be in any thing beside their follies and vices, in all which he made a most remarkable figure. He built fine houses, he bought pictures, he gamed; and compleat his character, he must now have a mistress of quality; and I, forsooth, was the happy object he pitched upon for this honour.

" I should have observed, that as soon as he got into his head to commence a man of figure, he married a wife whose whole fortune consisted in nobility of her family, being descended in the ninth move from a German baron, and none of her illustrious ancestors having stained their blood by any want of industry.

" Before he could obtain such an honour, he was obliged to hire an herald to deduce his pedigree, by the easy means of changing only four letters in

e, from an equally illustrious house; and to turn only daughter by a former wife, whose industry had greatly assisted to his making his fortune, out of s, without any provision more than a bare support absolute want.

The disposition that could demand such terms was from being softened, when its tyranny was confirmed by marriage. She governed in the most despotic manner. He was obliged to quit business. His fortune lavished upon her relations, who let him know they thought him honoured by their acceptance of it; and was but a cypher in his own house, where every servant quoted her command for disputing his authority, told him directly that he was not qualified to give directions to so genteel a family.

In such a situation it was not strange that he should for satisfaction abroad; but even in this his designa consistent with the rest of his conduct, and very different from what might most naturally be imagined. Significant as he was at home, he gave himself the best airs of politeness and consequence among his companions, where he was safe from the terror of his master's power; to confirm his title to which character, have said before, he formed the project of paying addresses to me, not from any particular passion he had for me.

---

### C H A P. VIII.

nnued. *A short way of making love. Bargains best made in few words; with an odd instance of old-fashioned folly.*

T is impossible to give any description of this important person's courtship. His politeness, it is reached so high as to accost me with as many and cringes as make the awkward ceremonial of crowned heads, and with an equal good grace. ere it all ended; and when he came to speak to me, was in the same phrase and manner as he would bargained for a parcel of cheese, or meal.

“ Madam,

“ Madam, (said he) understanding as how your ladyship’s favours are to be disposed of, I come to treat about the purchase. I like the appearance of your commodities, and do not doubt but they are in good order, and merchantable; and shall therefore give you your own price. I am not one of your higgling chaps that make many words to a bargain. Ready money is my way; and the rest I leave to yourself.”

“ Though I had studied my part very well, I was somewhat disconcerted at such an address. Recovering myself, however, in a few minutes, I was rather diverted than offended at the oddity of it, and resolved to drive the *bargain*, as he justly called it, in his own way. Accordingly I answered him with an affected confusion, that I did not rightly understand what he meant.

“ Madam, (replied he) my meaning is, to — to — In short, madam, plain dealing is best. My meaning is, to purchase some certain favours from you, for which I am willing to pay you the highest price of the market. I despise making fine speeches; but if you are inclined to deal, no one shall outbid me. I never think good wares too dear. Come don’t stand shilly, shally! Say! is it a bargain, ay or no?

“ It was impossible for me to pretend ignorance longer; though I did not think proper to accept of his proposals too readily, for fear it should make him think slightly of my *ware*; at the same time that I saw it necessary to keep up his hopes, by seeming to enter into treaty with him, as he was insensible of that expectation and anxiety which to minds of more delicacy the food of love.

“ You men of consequence (I answered) have a peculiar way of doing every thing. Your fortune raise you above the formalities necessary to be served by other people. I own I do not disapprove of your proposal; but as it is a thing which I have never yet thought about, I must take some time to consider what terms are proper for me to make.”

mean while I shall be glad to see you as often as is convenient for you to do me that honour."

Osso, madam, (returned he, overjoyed at his success) you are a sensible woman, and speak like one that has been used to business. I like you the better your frankness. It is my own way. And when I have fixed your price, we shall not differ. There will be no delay on my part. Ready money! Ready money is always my word." — Saying this my lover his leave, and left me not a little at a loss how to ge with him.

As I was no stranger to the circumstances of his, the first thought that occurred to me was, to the whole to his wife, and concert measures her for punishing his infidelity and presumption. pon reflection I enlarged my scheme, and resolved if I could not turn his ridiculous passion to some stage for his deserted daughter, before I gave him her chastisement.

Accordingly I went directly to a lady with whom she was acquainted, and enquiring, as if from on curiosity, into her circumstances and character, the pleasure to find her every way worthy of my and assistance. I therefore sent for her very pri- that evening, as if to give her some needle-work for me; her father's allowance being so small that as obliged to have recourse to industry, to enable live with any degree of comfort, though shame her do it with as much privacy as possible; and my conversation that turn which I thought most to win her confidence, pressed her to let me know signs and prospects for life; for making such en- I assured her that I had other motives than meer ty.

Moved by the manner in which I spoke, she burst flood of tears; and as soon as she was able to told me modestly, that she had no prospects, as incapable of forming any designs; that indeed light of her wishes would be to be married to a man who had been bred to business under her but was turned off as well as herself on the new-

new-ordering of his family ; that they had loved each other from their infancy ; but he having no fortune to enter into trade with, his family which was very reputable, having been ruined by the calamities of war ; and her father abandoning her in the manner he did, she could not think of transmitting their misfortunes to the innocent posterity by marrying ; and therefore had vowed to each other to live single, as the only proof they could give of the sincerity of their mutual attachment.

" I was not proof to such a story. I embraced her tenderly ; and assuring her of my friendship, bade her hope for a happy change in her fortune very speedily. I then enquired how much would be sufficient to set her husband in business with a prospect of success, and encourage them to marry ? And on her answering, that if they had about a thousand crowns to add to some little matter they had already made a shift to lay up by their frugality, they would venture, and trust the event to the blessing of Providence on their honest industry. I told her, that if I was not disappointed much beyond my expectation, she should not long want a greater sum than that ; but that all depended on her not taking the least notice of her having been with me, or even mentioning my name to any one living, till I should give her permission. This caution she promised to observe most carefully, and then took her leave with a lighter heart than she had felt for some time.

" My design upon my *ready-money* lover was not urged by a better motive than either amusement or revenge, which had first set me upon it. The money which I doubted not to extort from his absurd passion I resolved to give to his daughter ; and then to make use of the assistance of his wife, to avoid performing my part of the bargain, and compleat my original scheme who, I was sensible, would not only punish him sufficiently for his vicious folly, but also expose him to the highest and most public ridicule.

## C H A P. IX.

continued. Many buyers raise the market. On ballancing avarice and vanity, the former kicks the beam.

ACCORDINGLY, when he came to pay me a visit next morning, I gave him an opportunity of renewing his treaty, which he pressed so warmly to be brought to a conclusion, that after a little affected hesitation, I condescended to capitulate; and at length assented to his proposal for the consideration of two thousand crowns.

"At the mention of such a sum he looked aghast. Two thousand crowns! (said he, as soon as he could shut his mouth to articulate a word) Why, sure your ladyship can't be serious! I never heard of such a thing in my life. Two thousand crowns for a night's lodging! I have lodged a whole army for less before now. You surely can't be serious, in making such a demand! A prince is not able to purchase your favours at such a price."

"Then no prince shall have them, Sir, (answered I, putting on a look of offended dignity) and if you think my demand too high, you are welcome to go where you may be served cheaper. I know where I can have more from another person; but as you spoke first, I would not treat with any one else till I had concluded with you."

"More than two thousand crowns! Death, Madam, it is impossible. Who is able to offer more than two thousand crowns?"

"Really, Sir, I do not think myself obliged to answer such a question. However, to let you see that I am above imposing on you, What do you think of the *count*?"

At that word his pride instantly took fire. He had been born a vassal of the count's family, to efface the remembrance of which he now took every opportunity of entering into competition, and insulting him with ostentatious display of his superior wealth. This I knew, and therefore made use of his name, though

without any authority, as the surest method of working him up to my design; being confident he would scorn to be outdone in any thing, much more a matter so essential to his character, by one whom he both hated and despised so highly.

" The event shewed I had judged right. " The count, madam, (said he, with an air of contempt) " Why! what of him? Is not my money as good as his?

— " Yes, sir, I believe it may; but you do not seem so well inclined to part with it, I thought after what you said last night, that we should not have a second word; but I find people can talk their ready money without opening their purses."

" Madam! I'd have you to know, madam, that I scorn such an imputation. It is well known that I never go back from my word, madam. When I say it, I will do it. But really don't you think you ask to much? Is there no prevailing on you to abate?"

— " Sir, you said yesterday, that you did not intend to make many words; no more do I, sir. On the strength of your offering ready money, I set the very lowest terms; and I wonder how you can think the much to a woman of my quality. In my country I have known an orange-girl get more. But perhaps you would chuse such low-lived creatures, though I own I took you for a person of better spirit, and above descending to any thing unworthy of your rank; and I am sorry to find that I am mistaken. It is true, I had some hints of the kind given me, therefore did not give the count a positive denial, so that I can easily come to treat with him again. He knows what is due to a lady of distinction, and will not make words about such a trifle. So, Sir, your humble servant."

" While I was making this notable and delicate speech, which I could scarce suppress my laughter utter, he stood in the most whimsical situation, as ballancing the account between avarice and vanity. length the latter prevailing, " Hold, madam,

he, catching me by the sleeve, for fear I should leave him) pray, don't be in such a violent hurry. I know how to behave to you as well as the count, and better too; and I'll see him damned before he shall touch the hem of your garment. I'll make him know that he shall not pretend to outbid me, for any thing I have a mind to! That I will! And so, madam, you shall have your price, without any drawback; and in earnest of the bargain, take this purse of an hundred ducats. Only name the time and place; that's all; that's all. I won't stand for a receipt."

—“ Then, Sir, if you will please to come secretly, at ten to-morrow night, to my garden door, I'll meet you there myself, and conduct you up.”

—“ Very well; I'll be sure to come. I am always punctual to a minute, in those affairs; but must I bring the rest of the money with me, or will you make me your banker, and draw it out as you want it?”

—“ I should, Sir, with all my heart; but it happens that I have occasion for it to-morrow morning, and therefore must beg the favour of you to bring it to me by nine o'clock.”

—“ How, madam! nine o'clock in the morning! I thought you said ten at night.”

—“ Yes, Sir, so I did, to perform my part of the bargain. I only mean that you should bring the money so early, as I have a pressing call for it in the forenoon. I presume you have no objection obliging me so far; and don't doubt my honour to keep my promise.”

—“ N—N—No, madam! I—I—I can't say as how I do doubt your ladyship's honour in the least, for the matter of that. But still, I—I—I—I. Will not the evening do as well? I should be glad to oblige you to be sure; but advancing money before we have even had a sample of the goods, is quite out of the way of business. It is what I never do.”

—“ Then, Sir, here is your purse again; and I am sorry to have thrown away so much time. I

C 2 “ must

“ must and will have the money to-morrow morning.  
“ I know the count will make no difficulty. Persons of  
“ quality have confidence in each other.”

—“ Madam, I have as much confidence as he,  
“ or any man; and as for *quality*, with the addition of  
“ my wife’s arms, I have nine quarterings more than  
“ he. His rank, indeed! And so, madam, I am ready  
“ to oblige your ladyship with all my heart, if it was  
“ ten times more. I only said it was out of the course  
“ of business. I did not refuse you. No! no! I  
“ know better what is due to a person of rank, than  
“ to refuse such a trifle. We always have a regard  
“ for one another.”

—“ Then, sir, I may depend upon you, at nine  
“ in the morning without fail.”

—“ You may most assuredly, madam; and so take  
“ the earnest again.”

“ All things being thus settled, I permitted him the  
honour of a salute, as earnest of the bargain on my  
side, and sent him away quite happy.

“ I suppose his impatience for the arrival of the next  
morning was not quite so high as mine, violent as his  
passion was. However he was punctual to his time  
and being immediately admitted to my dressing-room  
as soon as the servants withdrew, “ Here, madam  
“ (said he, with an emotion that shewed the struggle  
“ in his breast at what he was doing) here is the mo-  
ney. You may tell it over. I have only deducted  
“ the hundred duckets I gave you in earnest, and the  
“ usual discount for advancing money before hand  
“ only five per cent, no more; and we never do it less.  
Business will not afford it.”

“ Well, sir, (answered I, fully satisfied that I was  
“ secure of so much) I do not understand these mat-  
ters; but I leave it entirely to you. And to con-  
vince you that I am a person of honour, I will be  
“ punctual to my appointment as you have been to  
“ your’s. At ten precisely, you shall find me at the  
“ garden-door. But for fear of being observed, don’t  
“ you think it would be better if you were to dis-  
“ yourself some way. A lady’s reputation, you know  
“ is a very tender thing; neither would it be so pro-  
“ priate.”

that a person of your dignity should be discovered. It would lessen your importance in the eyes of the public."

" Why, madam, to be sure, what your ladyship says is very right; and therefore, though I shall scarce know myself when I lay by my robes, I will strive to do without them for once, and come disguised in the dress of any private gentleman. I have heard that the greatest pleasure of an intrigue is in the stratagems and tricks that are practised to hide it. Hah! hah! hah! And so I wish your ladyship a good morning. At ten! remember at ten."

" My scheme having succeeded thus far, I was intent to communicate their good fortune to those who were to reap the benefit of it. I therefore wrote to his daughter, to come to me that night about eleven o'clock, and bring her lover with her. The great difficulty now was how to open the affair to the wife, in such a manner, that she should be ready to be produced at a proper time, without danger of her letting her wrath break out too soon, so as to prevent the accomplishment of my design.

" The only way I could think of was, to go to the lady from whom I had the story of the family, and who, had reason to believe, would gladly give her assistance to promote any scheme for punishing her husband, and exposing him to ridicule. At the first mention of the affair, she entered most heartily into it; and to make use of the lady, went directly and engaged her to spend the evening with her; not chusing to let her know a word of the matter till every thing should be ripe for execution, for fear of the violence of her temper.

## C H A P. X.

*Continued. Listeners seldom like what they hear. The danger of provoking high blood; with the great merit of peace-making in the modern way,*

“ **A**LL things being thus prepared, the expected hour at length arrived, when I attended to admit my gallant, who did not make me wait long. On my opening the garden-door, I was surprised to see the manner in which he had disguised himself. He had put on an old suit of cloaths all over dawb'd with lace, which had belonged half a century before to relation of his wife's, whom the tradition of her family recorded to have been a general officer; and which she preserved with the most religious care, as an indisputable proof of her illustrious descent, supplying new lace or cloth occasionally, to repair the depredations of time.

“ The absurdity of putting on for privacy a dress whose glaringness and singularity must attract the notice of every one who saw it, and would probably draw the mob after his heels, could not have escaped any one but himself; but his head was too intent upon making figure in the eyes of his mistress, to mind any thing else; as I was far from being displeased at it, my motive for desiring him to disguise himself being only to expose him to stronger ridicule on detection, which I did not design he should escape.

“ As soon as he entered the garden, his first care was to make me observe the brilliancy of his appearance, by telling me that according to my desire he had come in disguise, but could not possibly debase himself or dishonour me so much as to put on any dress unworthy of his rank, or improper to appear in before me. I thanked him for my share of his compliment and being apprehensive that he might be for taking some liberties which I did not like, if I made any delay there, led him directly up to my own chamber, where I left him in the dark, telling him I would return as soon as I saw my servants properly disposed.

“ I then

I then went down into the parlour, where my confederate had just brought his wife, big with expectation of hearing something from me that nearly concerned her honour. Few words were requisite to introduce a subject which all were equally impatient for. I directly unfolded to her the injustice designed to her husband; (the affair of the money I thought proper not to mention for obvious reasons) and telling her, that having in vain tried every argument to get rid of his impudence, and convince him of the flagrancy of such a crime against a lady of her rank, I had at length pretended to comply with his desires, on purpose to give him up to her admonitions and authority, which I hoped might be more effectual to reclaim him; and therefore made an appointment with him, as if to gratify his vile desires, in consequence of which he was at very moment in my chamber, whither she was at liberty to go to him.

“ It is impossible to describe the effect this story had on her. She stood for some moments convulsed with rage. At length recovering herself a little, she was for going directly and trampling the wretch under her feet; but her friend interposed and insinuating, as we had concerted, that though what I had said might possibly be very true, it would yet be a satisfaction to the lady to be a witness to it herself; wherefore she thought it would be the best way, if I pleased, for me to return to him, and enter into some such dissuasive discourse as I had before used, his answers to which would confirm what I had said, and be a testimony against him, that he could not attempt to deny or evade. To this I replied with an offended air, that I was not accustomed to have what I said doubted; however, on such an occasion as this I should waive all punctilio, to give satisfaction to one for whom I had so high a respect as her ladyship; and therefore was ready to do that, or anything else she should desire.

“ Flattered by this compliment, she nodded majestically, and suppressing her wrath as well as she could, let me know that she would attend me to the disgraceful scene.

“ My gallant was by this time beginning to be impatient. On my opening the door (which I left open for his wife, though I shot the lock to impose upon him) he advanced to me, and taking me by the hand, asked why I had not brought a light? “ Deeds of darkness (said I, with a loud sigh) should avoid the light. “ I do not believe I shall ever bear to see the light again after consenting to give you this meeting. But I hope you will reflect on the blackness of such a crime, as this you have been so long soliciting me to, and desist before it is too late.”

— “ Hey-day! What can be the meaning of all this? What fool’s-play can you be at now? Come! come! for shame, stand to your word. I cannot stay long with you to-night. I must be at home before my *Jezebel* of a wife, to pull off these cloaths. If she should see them upon me, I should never hear the last of it. I cannot stay above an hour; and so make haste.”

— “ I am amazed, Sir, that you can speak of a lady of your wife’s rank in so disrespectful a manner! It gives me a very bad opinion of you. She merits better treatment; and after the honour she has done you in condescending to be your wife, it is the highest injustice and ingratitude in you to wrong her better than with any body else.”

— “ Blood, madam, you are enough to make a man mad, to stand trifling so at such a time as this! As to what you say about my wife’s bed, it is all nonsense. No man can bear to bed with such an ugly, filthy brute; and for the honour she did me, I am sure I have paid dearly for it. I have raised her great family from beggary. They had not a rag to cover their illustrious nakedness, till I took compassion.”

“ At these words, in burst his wife like a tygrel, robbed of her whelps. “ Villain! slave! base mechanic! (exclaimed she) You take compassion on my family! You raise them from beggary! But I’ll not stoop to talk to you. I’ll have satisfaction! I will! the blood of your base heart shall wash away the

“ affront.

affront. I'll summon all my relations to-morrow-morning, and lay your villainy before them. They'll vindicate the honour of our house ; they'll do justice to themselves and me, in a manner that shall strike terror into all such ungrateful wretches."

" While she poured out these threats, she was searching for him all round the room ; but he fortunately escaped her by creeping under the bed, the moment he heard her voice, where he lay in a situation at may easily be conceived. Not being able to find him, she roared out for lights ; but I thought it would be too severe to give him up, till her anger should be somewhat cooled, and therefore countermanded them ; and as she had by this time raved herself out of breath, took her by the hand, and leading her to a chair, Pray, madam, (said I, in a soothing accent) sit down for a moment and strive to compose yourself. I own, the provocation you have received is very great, to have your bed slighted, and your person spoke so injuriously of." —

" Mention not that ! (answered she) mention not that ! I despise him too much to regard any thing he can say of myself. But my family ! The villain, to traduce my family, and talk of their being under obligation to him ! They who suffered him to come into their pedigree, and quarter their arms ! I will have revenge. I will have his heart's blood."

" The resentment you shew, madam, (interposed the other lady) is worthy of you, and proves the nobility of your blood. No person of family can bear such abuse. But still, madam, consider who it is that has offered it. A creature that is not worthy of the resentment of your relations, and has not the spirit to meet them to be killed fairly, and as a man of honour should kill him ; and you would not have them turn assassins and murder him, and so let all his fortune go to his daughter, as you could not inherit it after such an action. For all these reasons, I would recommend it to you to make up this ugly affair. What has passed is known only to yourselves, and need go no farther. Wherefore, if

“ he will ask your pardon for what he intended to do,  
“ and actually said to this lady, and will make over  
“ half his fortune to you, to settle upon your own fa-  
“ mily, in case you should have no children your-  
“ self, I think your ladyship had better forgive  
“ him.”

“ The other heard her out with great patience; and  
then pausing for some time, as if to weigh matters,  
“ Well, madam, (said she, sighing) since you advise it,  
“ I submit. For this offence I will accept of the fa-  
“ faction you propose; but let him take care how he  
“ repeats it.”

“ Matters being thus happily adjusted, I called for  
lights, and desired my gallant to make his appearance,  
who having overheard all that passed, ventured to  
creep out of his hole, tho' without daring to speak a  
word.

---

### CHAP. XI.

*Concluded. A relapse is often worse than the first disorder. By the help of good friends, the grey mare proves the better horse. The whole concluded with some interesting reflections, which prove that people should look before they leap.*

“ **T**HE candles discovered a groupe of figures not easy to be described. My unfortunate gallant, all pale and trembling, his bushy wig turned awry, and the powder of it spread over his cloaths, which were all tumbled and dropping wet from something he had spilled in his creeping under the bed, fixed his haggard eyes upon his tender mate, who no sooner perceived the splendid relicks of her kinsman's rank abused in such a manner, than forgetting her pacific resolution, she relapsed into all her former fury.

“ Audacious villain! (exclaimed she, her eyes glaring with rage, and her whole face distorted with a very diabolical passion) “ to profane that sacred testimony of the honour of my family on such a wick-

“ ed,

ed, base occasion ! Were you not afraid that the offended spirit of its illustrious owner would come and tear it from your vicious carcase ? But he has left the task to me."

" Saying this, she flew at the trembling wretch with impetuosity not to be prevented, and, driving her fangs into his cheeks, in an instant bathed his face in blood. Cowards when aroused are always most desperate. Though nothing could have made him face her fury deliberately, the moment he felt her claws in his flesh he forgot his fears, and giving an hideous roar, returned her assault with equal violence, fastening one hand in her hair, and striking her on the face and breast with all his might with the other.

" The combat now was really terrible, and the victory for some time doubtful. But at length with our assistance, who, when we thought she had suffered enough, under the appearance of parting them, overpowered him, the Amazon got the better, and kneeling on his breast as he lay on the ground, vented her rage upon him while she was able to strike a blow. When she could beat him no more, we made a shift to separate and raise them from the ground, and having with some difficulty restored them both to their senses, resumed our mediation, in which we were so successful, both parties being sufficiently sick of the quarrel, that a reconciliation was agreed to, which we took care should be on the most mortifying terms to the old lecher.

" During all these transactions, my poor gallant used frequently to look at me so significantly, that I was afraid his wife would have observed it, and extorted an explanation. But it escaped her notice, and he thought proper not to mention any thing of the matter ; whether that he judged such an instance of extravagance would only provoke her more ; for, lavish as she was of his money upon her relations, she grudged him every penny he spent ; or concluded from my conduct, that I should deny the charge, which in that case would only aggravate his shame, as he had no proof of it.

" To

“ To confirm him in this opinion, which I guessed to be the cause of his silence when his lady and he were first ready to depart, I mustered up all the assurance I could, and addressing myself to her ; “ I hope, madam, (said I) that if this odd affair should ever happen to be known, you will bear witness to the purity and virtue of my conduct : and you, sir, I must caution against taking any liberties with my character, with a view of extenuating your own crime, or laying any thing to my charge which you cannot plainly prove, as you regard your life ; which, you are sensible, would be made answerable for any insult offered to me.”

“ To this speech she replied in the affirmative, while her husband returned only one of his expressive looks, and then they lovingly departed together.

“ When my confederate and I had indulged our mirth for some time, we went to my gallant’s daughter, who, with her lover, was just then come. On my entering the room where they were, the strongest anxiety appeared in both their faces, though modesty prevented their giving it utterance. Not to keep them in pain, “ You told me yesterday, madam, (said I, taking her by the hand) that a thousand crowns would give you a prospect of happiness, with this deserving gentleman. I now have the pleasure to inform you, that I have applied to your father, with whom I have pleaded so successfully, that I have got you two thousand from him, which I have ready to give you, and hope heaven will bless it in your hands.”

“ What this happy pair felt on this occasion, may be easier conceived than described. They fell together on their knees before I could possibly prevent them, and kissing my hands, bathed them with tears of extacy. My heart melted in sympathy with them. I raised them from the ground, and embracing them both, led them, unable to speak, into the next room, where I put the money into the lady’s hands who directly gave it to him. We then sat down to supper, during which, to relieve their spirits that were sinking under the pressure of joy and gratitude, I gave a loose

the pleasure my heart was overflowing with, and entertained them in the most obliging and familiar manner ; and when the servants retired, gratified their curiosity, which I saw raised to a torture, with an account of the whole affair, but in the light most favourable to my old gallant, to avoid giving his daughter pain, notwithstanding his unnatural treatment of her, never mentioned him but in terms of duty and respect.

Though the burgher and his lady had promised, they really ought for their own sakes, to keep thisious affair secret, it soon took wind. The lady, whose natural sweetness of temper was not much en-  
raged by this affair, never saw the livid marks of her  
husband's prowess upon her face, or thought of the  
fanation of her kinsman's clothes, that she did not  
give him a comfortable lecture on his baseness and de-  
cency before all companies ; by which means all she  
knew of the matter became public. But this was not

My gallant had boasted among his intimates of his planting the count in my favour ; and when he was  
recovered from the effects of his wife's resentment  
to be able to shew his face, scrupled not to say that  
he had carried his success to the height of his wishes,  
though he never took courage to renew his applica-  
tions to me, nor even, which I wondered at, to demand restitution of his money.

This laid me under a necessity of telling the whole  
r, in my own vindication, both his giving me the  
key and the use I had made of it, which gave the  
another turn ; those who were most unfavourable  
their opinions of me before, now changing their note,  
extolling my justice and generosity to the skies.  
was this the only advantage I received from it.  
rest of my admirers, terrified by the burgher's  
thought proper to draw off in time, and give up  
sue that might be attended with danger ; so that  
was delivered from the persecution of their imperti-  
e.

By this time the campaign was ended, and my  
d returned to me, who enjoyed the whole story  
the highest pleasure ; but as my gallant might  
-way have it in his power to make my abode in  
that

that place disagreeable, (for he was more vexed at the use I had applied his money to, than at his own losing it) before he took the field next season, he removed me hither, where I have lived ever since, if not in the credit I could wish, yet without any new reproach, and where I want nothing so much as the approbation of my own mind to make me happy.

" You may probably wonder why I do not seek the happiness, by breaking off my present connection with my friend, and returning to my family. But, alas! the things which we ought to do are not always in our power. I see what is best, but I follow that which is worst. My heart is now so wedded to him, (If I may use the expression) that death only can part me from him and though the pleasure I enjoy in his company is never without alloy, even for the poor pittance of his time which it is in his power to spend with me, from the reflection of its being criminal both in the commencement and continuation of it, I have not resolution, I cannot even say I have a wish to be separated from him.

" Beside, whom should I return to? What happiness could I expect at home? My family, indeed, have let me know that they would receive me; but how? Not with their esteem. That is impossible. As a reprobate whom they have admitted out of charity, to give her an opportunity of repentance, and save her from ruin in another life as well as this; and as a reproach to them, whom they would keep among themselves to hide it from the world. Every look would upbraid me, every word inflict my folly. At least consciousness would take it in the sense, which were equally intolerable.

" I have thus, my dear friend, given you a view of my unhappy life, both to entertain you and ease my own heart, by pouring out my griefs into your bosom. If you think me worthy of the like confidence, or that my advice can be of any advantage to you, I shall give it with as much sincerity as I shall receive yours with gratitude upon all occasions; and I promise you the most inviolable secrecy."

## C H A P. XII.

*The story generally introduces another. The true object of female attention to dress. Common consequences of fashionable intimacy, and female friendship, with the secret of making a right use of a shoeing-horn.*

THE other lady, who had listened to her friend's story with the strongest attention, was some time before she made any answer. At length, with a downcast look and heavy sigh, "I should make a bad report, dear madam, (said she) for the good opinion you have shewn of me, could I harbour any doubt of you, or refuse to comply with any thing you desire. An unhappy story has few circumstances; and O that sequel of it may have fewer yet! Those in which differs from yours, are all to my disadvantage. The principles of virtue were inculcated on my opening mind with the tenderest care, and enforced to my imitation by the most lively example. I passed the most dangerous season of life, when ripening youth too often makes passion an over-match for reason, without reach; and at last ran head-long into ruin, with my eyes open.

You must wonder at a conduct so contrary to every motive that should influence a creature endowed with the faintest glimmering of reason. But the cause may easily be traced. Public fame had flattered me into an opinion of my own beauty; and many examples justified my ambition of rising to the most exalted fortune on the merit of that alone. Yielding, therefore, to the impulse of vanity, I thought of nothing but improving that advantage; and, under the pretence of studying my own pleasure, laid snares, in the most anxious and mercenary assiduity, for any man whom I thought proper for my purpose: wretched toil to which the greatest part of our devote the prime of life.

"I pro-

“ I proceeded for some time on this plan, when the gentleman with whom I am at present connected, took it into his head to single me out for the object of his gallantry. Though his being a married man cut all hopes of success in my favourite scheme, there was something so flattering to my vanity in being admired by a person of his rank, that I could not resist the pleasure of it, especially as I meant nothing criminal, and this kind of gallantry had the sanction of fashion.

“ As the general intercourse kept up among people of distinction had been improved into some degree of intimacy between this gentleman’s wife and me, the assiduity with which he paid attention to me upon occasions, for some time passed for the effect of familiarity and friendship. But whether she suspected the truth, and therefore thought proper to shew a coolness to me, or that consciousness of deserving it made me think so, I at length began to fancy that she slighted me; and being confirmed in that opinion, by finding myself omitted in a general invitation of her acquaintances, I conceived the most violent resentment against her; to wreak which in the severest manner, I affected to listen to her husband’s addresses with pleasure, and gave reason for suspicions which were foreign to my heart, though at the same time I was not insensible that by such a conduct I ran the hazard of defeating my original design; but this I vainly thought I could remedy when I pleased, by breaking off all connection with him as soon as I had gratified my pique against her.

“ There is nothing more dangerous than listening to the allurements of vice, though with the most innocent intention. It is like playing on the brink of a precipice. By making the idea familiar, it takes off its terrors, and brings on a false security that generally betrays into a fall.

“ I expected that my admirer’s wife would soon perceive this change in my conduct, and by breaking with me entirely, give me an opportunity of triumphing over her in the most mortifying manner, by shewing the most sovereign contempt for what made her so unhappy.

instead of this, she continued to treat me with the same if not greater intimacy than ever, and convinced me that the offence I had taken had been all groundless.

Whether she did this to retort my schemes, and make me look despicable even in my own eyes, or in order of shaming me into a proper sense of my behaviour by the contrast between it and hers, I cannot say; but this I know that it had the former effect most fully, and would certainly have succeeded in the latter also, if it had not been for one of those accidents which, as you have observed, shew the insignificancy of human wisdom, and rule our lives.

A gentleman of distinguished rank and fortune, who was far advanced in years, and in every respect an object of aversion and contempt, unhappily had a liking to me. The advantages of such a match had the eyes of all my friends, who exerted their best influence to induce me to consent to it. But though this was the very object I had all along had in view, and had fed the most sanguine hope my vanity had ever fed, when it came to the test, my heart rebelled, and I could not bring myself to barter happiness for honour.

Though I gave this answer in the most determined manner, and supported it with reasons impossible to be disputed, my lover would not desist; on the contrary, he seemed determined to weary me out by his importunity, and, to second it, engaged the authority of my father, on the strength of which he always urged his cause with the most insulting confidence.

The contrast between this conduct, and the usual insinuating address of my former admirer, was striking. I began to hearken to him with more interest than ever; and, from a confirmed persuasion that I could not be happy with the other, rashly concluded that I must be so with him, as if the alternative was unavoidable.

As my ancient suitor had settled his bargain with me, he looked upon me as secure, and therefore made no secret of the affair. The moment it came

came to my lover's ears, he expostulated with me upon it in the most passionate and tender terms; and though I had yet formed no resolutions which made it necessary for me to account for my conduct to him, I held the other in such aversion, that in the weakness of my heart I could not conceal it; nor my unhappiness and apprehensions from the authority and importunities of my friends.

" He was too well versed in the science of intrigue not to take immediate advantage of this. He consulted with me on the cruelty of such a persecution, enumerated the many instances in which it had been unhappy and unsuccessful; and heightened my dislike of the other into abhorrence, by several anecdotes of his character which I was before a stranger to. Nor did he stop here. As he was intimate with his rival, he instantly exerted all his art to urge him to press his suit with me more earnestly, imputing my refusal to coyness which was only to be wooed, and turning his bashfulness, as he called it, into ridicule.

" While he stimulated him in this manner, he made me believe that he used every argument which generosity and honour could suggest, to dissuade him from pursuing that he saw was so disagreeable, but all in vain. The other declaring, that if I persisted much longer, I would have recourse to the authority of my friends which they had promised to exert at a proper time, when resistance should be out of my power. This scheme was too successful. Urged on by him, my suitor pressed his addresses with redoubled warmth, and enforced them with new offers, which engaged my friends still more willingly in his behalf; and by that means confirmed all my lover had said to me, who aggravated my apprehension of compulsion to such a height, fixing the very hour when I was to be sacrificed to a particular day, on which I had been obliged to accept of an invitation to his country-in company with some of my nearest relations, that in the madness of affright I listened to the proposals he made to me, and consented to come away with him, persuading myself that, however blameable such a step might be in other cases, self-preservation justified it in me; so that

ran away from my suitor, rather than with my

The mystery of this management I was not long acquainted with. He was so proud of the address had shewn in it, that the moment he had me in his power, he could not avoid boasting of it in the vanity of his heart. This was the first thing that awoke me to reflection, though I have since had abundant reasons to be mortified. The mortification of finding myself duped in a manner by one whose understanding I had ever held in too low esteem, to have any apprehensions of any kind, with the ridiculously vexatious circumstances which attended my elopement, had such an effect upon me that I wrote to my friends in the anguish of my mind, to beg I might be permitted to return and throw myself absolutely upon their mercy in every respect but that of being sacrificed to that odious old creature ; but as pride prevented their complying with my request, I concluded, tho' most injuriously, that my ruin was compleated, and rejected me with disdain, as a burden to them.

I then had no choice left, and was obliged to proceed from necessity in the crime of folly, as, I am perceived, is the case of many of those who appear most miserable. What will be the consequence I dare not divine. This I am determined on : I will not be a sport of his caprice, carried about like an unnecessary part of his baggage, only for show, to gratify his vanity at the expence of my shame. He shall either end his military life at the end of this campaign, and then, according to his repeated promises and oaths, to some place where we shall not be known ; or I will end him, and return home at every event. I am endued to a fortune that will afford me a morsel of bread in some country-village, where I may have leisure enough to repent of my folly ; and even that is better than the life I lead now."

## C H A P. XIII.

*More military matters. Politics on one side of the question.*

JUST as the lady had concluded her story, my low-traveller continued his journey. I therefore left the fair friends together, to compare the errors their past conduct, and confirm each other in their resolutions of amendment.

The fettler, having taken the circuit he intended arrived at the camp to which he was going without any accident, and delivered his packet into the general own hand, who running his eye over the contents

“ This will do! (said he) This will do! I have long waited for an opportunity to give them a decided stroke, and now I have got it; thanks to my faithful and vigilant agents! Sure no other people ever were so infatuated as to harbour the subjects of the enemies thus in their very bosom; in a time of open war! They do not preconcert a motion that I have not notice of. Indeed, if it were not for the intelligence which I receive in this manner, I should often be at a loss.”

The purport of the intelligence which he had received was, that the adverse army would be so considerably weakened, as the next day, by several detachments, that a general attack might be made almost with a certainty of success. Such an opportunity was not to be missed. He instantly set about making all necessary preparations, and sent orders to another general who commanded a separate body of forces, subordinate to him, to second his design, by a vigorous attack at the same time on the side next him. The positions he made wore the most promising aspect; but, according to the usual uncertainty of military operations, his whole scheme miscarried. He met with so warm a reception from the enemy, who had an opportunity of opposing their whole force to him (the other general not attacking at the same time,) that he was forced to retreat with precipitation and considera-

le loss, and leave the other, who was just then  
ing up, exposed to the victorious army, which might  
given him a total defeat, had not that been con-  
to the general's scheme of protracting the war;  
therefore, content with repulsing one part of the  
y's forces, permitted the other to retreat without  
ake.

This disappointment inflamed the discord which al-  
subsisted between the two generals; the chief  
ing, that he should have succeeded in his attempt,  
is orders been properly obeyed by the other, who  
ed the accusation, and said he was abandoned on  
ose that he might be cut off, which must have been  
onsequence had not the enemy mistaken a retreat,  
ich he saw no necessity, for a stratagem to draw  
n between the two corps, each of which was al-  
equal to his whole army.

The consequence of this disagreement is obvious.  
general had his own creatures among the officers,  
openly espousing the cause of their patrons, be-  
kind of civil war among themselves, which threat-  
the most dangerous effects, had the enemy been  
upon taking the advantage of them.

my proceeding to take a view of this army, I was  
ly struck at the difference between it and that  
I had seen before. In the other, though a va-  
of interests prevented the various corps of which  
s composed from holding that friendly intercourse  
each other, that ought to subsist between men en-  
in the same cause, yet still that jealousy went  
ther than an unsociable distance, and never inter-  
with duty. The men beside were well provided  
the necessary appointments of every kind, which  
ved them in that health and vigour indispensably  
al to success.

here every thing wore a different aspect. Tho'  
subjects of the same sovereign, and therefore  
in every view of interest, the officers, as I have  
ed, were divided into factions, and embroiled in  
nt quarrels; and the private men sickly, half-  
d, and half-naked; yet under all these distracti-  
and distresses, the levity of temper which charac-  
terises

terises their nation displayed itself in its greatest force, the officers forgetting their animosity the moment they put up their swords, and chatting together on matters of mirth and amusement with all the familiarity of friends, till some accident revived their disputes; and the men dancing to divert hunger, and keep them warm, and all venting their resentment against the authors of their several grievances in a scurrilous song or taunt.

While I was making these observations the night after this miscarriage, my attention was struck by a conversation which passed between two officers on guard, who having drawn off to some distance from their men, thought themselves in no danger of being overheard, and therefore opened their hearts without reserve.

“ I think, (said one of them whose accent shew’d him to be a foreigner) that considering all things, we got very well over this affair. Had the enemy pursued his advantage, I do not know what might have been the consequence.”

“ That is very true, (answered the other) it may have been somewhat disagreeable; but this will always be the case where court favour is put in competition with merit, and rivals joined in competition whose emulation is to supplant each other, though at the ruin of the public cause; and this is the very thing that has drawn this war out to such a tedious length. The general who began it gloriously was immediately removed, to make way for one whose sole aim was to make a fortune by every iniquitous and inhuman method of ruining the unhappy country, tries which were the seat of war, and defrauding the very army he commanded of their necessary appointments. When his avarice was satiated, and the public clamour grown too loud, he was succeeded by another favourite, though of an opposite party who was honest, it is true, but had less military knowledge, which brought a disgrace upon the general, not paralleled in its annals.

“ To retrieve that, necessity pointed out the general, on whose activity and valour

“ expecta-

expectations were founded. Nor did he disappoint them. His entrance on the command was signalized by several successful and glorious exploits, which were to prepare the way for more important events; but before he had time to put his great designs in execution, the same prevailing influence which had so unhappily removed the first general, and taken offence at the present also, found means to incumber him with his present colleague, and by that means stopped his progress, as you have seen this day; and where it yet may end, I tremble to think."

Faith, (replied the former) this is but an uncomfortable account, I own; but I never trouble my head with looking forward. My business is to fight when I am in the field, and live as well as I can upon my pay when I am not; and I mind nothing else. Yet but I should like to know something of these matters too; but I can't tell how it is, I have a bad head for politics myself, and I never converse with any one who is able and willing to instruct me. If it be not too much trouble, I should be obliged to you for some information. It will serve to pass away the time, as we have nothing to do. Pray, what was the cause of this war, that has cost us so many fine armies? And what are we sent here for? For my part, I cannot comprehend it for my life! We are marched all this way, I know not for what; and lose our lives I know not how, dying like rotten sheep, without any credit to ourselves or advantage to our sovereign.

You ask a question, my friend, (returned the other) not easy to be answered, nor safe to be discussed, were it possible for us to be overheard; but as I think there is no danger in that, I will strive to give you the best account I can of the matter.

The English and we, you know, are necessarily enemies, because we obstruct each other's views. If it was not for those head-strong Islanders, we could long since have raised the glory of our sovereign to the highest pitch, by the conquest of all

“ Europe;

“ Europe ; as, on the other hand, they would engross  
“ the commerce of the whole world, and of course be  
“ come masters of all the wealth in it, did we not credit  
“ their avaricious views by every possible means.  
“ negotiating, we always have the advantage of them  
“ but when we come to war, I do not know how  
“ it is, but they sometimes are hard enough for  
“ us.

“ As for the present war in particular, it took its  
“ rise solely from their presumption and injustice. Under  
“ the pretence of our having forcibly possessed ourselves  
“ of some spots of land which belonged to them in the  
“ boundless desert of America, they sell up  
“ our defenceless merchants without any previous  
“ declaration of war, and took numbers of them in  
“ cowardly pyratical manner.

“ Provoked at this insolence, our monarch in his  
“ wrath sent one of his armies, and conquered an  
“ important part of their dominions. Astonished at this  
“ stroke, they stood looking at each other in the  
“ despicable affright, while he proceeded gloriously  
“ in his conquests in every part of the globe.

“ Their terror was for some time so great, that they  
“ called in a parcel of their mercenary allies, to protect  
“ them from his vengeance, which they apprehended  
“ would pursue them, even in their own country ;  
“ giving themselves time to consider, that there  
“ was a sea between them which it was impossible for  
“ troops to pass.

“ At length they were rouzed from this state of stupor  
“ and stupefaction into a kind of phrenzy, in which,  
“ some strange mismanagement in our affairs, they  
“ only recovered almost all the conquests we had made  
“ from them, but also pushed their success to a length  
“ which a Frenchman cannot think of without blushing.

“ To ballance these advantages, and bring them  
“ to a proper way of thinking, we are sent here, where  
“ our alliances and the number of our forces encourage  
“ us to hope, that we might make such acquisitions as on a treaty of peace should be deemed  
“ equivalent.

equivalent to theirs, and exchanged for them. Hitherto matters have not succeeded quite so well as we expected ; but still we have gained one great point, in making them dissipate that wealth, which is the foundation of their power, in a fruitless opposition to us ; a folly that will certainly reduce them to beggary, if they persist in it much longer ; which our monarch knows, and for that reason continues to carry on the war, even under such apparent disadvantages."

## C H A P. XIV.

*New scheme for carrying on a war. An ill-timed doubt often disconcerts a good story. Anecdotes of a loyal family. The history of Sir ARCHIBALD, and ZELIDE, princess of Armenia.*

I AM very much obliged to you for this information, (replied the foreigner) I own I have never viewed things in this light before : I have indeed felt some of the bad consequences of our want of success in the stoppage of my pay ; but I never dreamed of the advantages which might attend the prosecution of an unsuccessful war.

But in the mean time, is there no danger that we may be out in our calculation, and ruined first ? By all appearances, the finances of the enemy are in a much more flourishing way than ours. They pay every body punctually, and even enlarge their expences every day, in pushing their good fortune, and supporting the conquests they make."

And so much the worse for them, (retorted the Frenchman) their punctual payments will soon leave them penniless. Our government acted more prudently. By refusing to pay their debts, they kept money in their hands to carry on their designs, which the others will soon find themselves unable to o.

As to their enlarging their expence in supporting their conquests, that is the very thing we desire.

“ We let them conquer only to draw them into more  
“ expence. You cannot think that our mighty mo-  
“ narch would have permitted their insolence to have  
“ gone unpunished so long, if he had not some great  
“ end in view. No! no! their conquests will be their  
“ ruin, take my word for it. As soon as they have  
“ exhausted themselves by conquering, they will be  
“ glad to give all up for a peace. It has ever been so.  
“ It is but sending an able negotiator to treat with  
“ them, and the work is done; their heads are too  
“ heavy for politics. No! no! their making conquest  
“ signifies nothing.

“ As to what you say of our being ruined first, that  
“ is all a mistake. Our king can never be ruined while  
“ there is money, or money's worth, in his dominions.  
“ It is all his own. He need not stoop to flatter his  
“ subjects to lend; he has power to take. They, it is  
“ true, may possibly suffer for a time; but what does  
“ that signify where the glory of their sovereign is con-  
“ cerned? No true Frenchman ever thinks of that.  
“ He leaves such selfish considerations to English mer-  
“ chants and mechanics. He is above them.

“ I say, *for a time*, because our resources are all within  
“ in ourselves. Let us be never so exhausted by war;  
“ a few years of peace never fail to restore us; and we  
“ have the pleasure to reflect, that the attention paid  
“ to our interests then always makes amends for what  
“ we suffered before; whereas our enemies think of a  
“ such thing. The moment they get a peace, which  
“ their eagerness for seldom lets them have patience  
“ to wait for on good terms, they fall to wrangling  
“ among themselves, and never trouble their heads  
“ about the good of the public, till they have occasion  
“ to call for assistance again; so that their affairs are  
“ always better managed in war than in peace, even  
“ respect to the matters most foreign to war.

“ The reason of this is, that their governors not  
“ having any direct property in the goods of their sub-  
“ jects, they think it not worth their while to take  
“ any care about them; whereas with us, all being  
“ in our sovereign's power, he looks upon the

as his own, and studies their improvement accordingly. Of this there might innumerable instances be given in all the articles of commerce, the ballance of which we constantly continue to bring into our favour, in peace, by some means or other, in less time than they wrest it from us in war."

" All this may be very true for aught I know, (said the foreigner) but one thing I am convinced of which is, that however conducive this power may be to the monarch's glory, it were better for his subjects that he should be without it. I have experienced both cases, and therefore am the better able to judge."

" If so, (answered the Frenchman with some tartness) I wonder why your countrymen chuse to come and fix themselves among us! Few people leave a place they like for one they do not."

" Very true, (replied the foreigner gravely) they seldom do. But there may be circumstances to influence such a choice. I have heard this glanced at more than once; and in such a manner, that I had difficulty to refrain from taking notice of it. I am not captious in my temper; but still I cannot bear insinuations injurious to my country. For this reason, as I esteem you, and consequently desire your good opinion, give me leave to relate a few of the particulars of my own case, which, I imagine, will make you view the matter in a different light from what you seem to have done hitherto; and convince you of the injustice of such reflections for the future; nor shall I trespass on your patience long.

" You are not a stranger to the revolutions which have happened in the British government. I will not enter into a discussion of the power which the people of England have on many occasions exercised over their sovereigns. That part of the British dominions in which I was born has ever been remarkable for the contrary principles; our unshaken loyalty having always been proof to temptation, and even to tyranny.

" In this antient monarchy my ancestors enjoyed distinguished honours, before the families of ma-

“ny of the present sovereigns of Europe had emerged  
“from barbarism and obscurity. Our possessions were  
“extensive; and if nature had denied the enervating de-  
“licacies of luxury, heaven made ample amends by the  
“number and virtue of our vassals, whose valour, guid-  
“ed by the loyalty of their lords, often supported their  
“sovereign’s throne in the dire conflicts of ambition, the  
“struggles which the untamed sons of savage liberty  
“made against law and rule.

“The virtuous actions of our ancestors are handed  
“down for imitation; nor is the sacred record discon-  
“tinued, till a series of unworthy deeds makes the de-  
“generate posterity blush at the upbraiding companion.  
“Doubt not therefore the tale which I am going to re-  
“late; nor think it to be the fiction of vanity or imagi-  
“nation. The reverend sire has still delivered it inva-  
“riably to his attentive sons, nor has a syllable been  
“altered in the course of so many generations.

“Our fame was not unknown in foreign lands.  
Wherever the shrill trumpet called the warriors forth to  
arms, our banners waved the foremost in the field  
and trophies won by feats of hardiest prowess, grace  
our social halls.

“We had proceeded in this honourable path for  
many ages, when holy Lewis, glowing with pious zeal,  
undertook to deliver the sacred repositories of the blest  
saints, the places hallowed by the footsteps of our  
Lord, from the profanation of infidels. Fired at the  
news of such a glorious design, the heir of our illustri-  
ous house led forth the chosen youths of all our hills  
to fight the battles of the faith. The name of the  
chief prepared a welcome for them, and justified the  
choice which Lewis made of youthful Archibald, to  
lead the van in all his armies, after he had dub’d him  
his own knight.

“The unhappy event of this great design is too  
well known. I shall therefore confine myself to what  
immediately concerns this my most honoured progen-  
tor. During the struggles which Lewis made with  
the malevolence of fortune, the actions of sir Archi-  
bald

and made him the terror of the hosts of the infidels ; at the same time that his exemplary virtues were a re-bash to the looser manners of his fellow soldiers. In an excursion which he made one day in quest of intelligence, fate directed his steps to the banks of a rivulet in the neighbourhood of the Saracen camp, the beauty of which tempted him to trace its course along the woody ale.

" He had not proceeded far, when the sounds of female voices struck his ear. The songs with which they filled the winding valley, declared the innocence and happiness of their hearts. He listened for a while ; and then as he was a truly chaste and courteous knight, was turning about to retire, for fear of intruding on their privacy, when a shriek of affright told him his assistance was necessary to them. He hesitated not a moment ; but rushing forward, saw that a troop of the mrauders who swarmed around the camp of Lewis, and dishonoured the Christian name with their atrocious crimes, had surprised a band of helpless females, and having dispersed their feeble guard of eunuchs, were carrying them forcibly away. He knew their danger in the hands of such worse than brutal ruffians ; and pronouncing his own name in a voice that shook the hills, ran forward to their rescue.

" Awed at the well-known name, they seemed to pause ; but their leader seeing that sir Archibald was alone and on foot, (for when he first heard the voices he had left his horse with his men, that he might not distract them as he advanced to listen more distinctly) waved his hand to his associates to follow, and clapping spurs to his horse's sides, was out of sight in a moment. But he did not escape so easily ; the well-aimed javelin of Archibald pierced the hindermost as he had turned himself to flight, and brought him lifeless to the ground. The active knight instantly seized the steed of the fallen traitor, and vaulting nimbly on him, rode after the rascals, whom he soon over-took, the struggles of the females impeding their flight, and their cries directing pursuit. The villains at first taking him for their companion avoided him not, nor stood on their defence ;

but the deaths of the two first of their number, who fell within the reach of his sword, convinced them of their error, and that it was impossible for them to fly from him.

“ Custom had inured them to danger, and despair now made them valiant. Their number also against his single arm gave them a prospect of success. They let go the women, therefore, and forming themselves into a troop, bore altogether upon him. But he disdained to wait for their assault; and rushing furiously into the midst of them, for some time maintained the unequal combat, and ballanced their numbers by his valour. Five of their bodies now lay breathless round him, when his horse, pierced to the heart with a spear, fell to the ground so suddenly, that all his agility and strength were not sufficient to disengage him from him. In this situation he expected nothing less than instant death, when all at once the assailants turned their backs, and sought their safety in flight.

“ Surprized at this, sir Archibald looked round, and saw his faithful men galloping up toward him. They had heard his voice when he first called to the russians, and imagining that he wanted their assistance, advanced with speed by the side of the rivulet, till they found the wretch whom he had pierced with his javelin; alarmed at the sight of whom, they doubled their haste, and happily came up time enough to save their lord.

“ The first care of sir Archibald was to search for the women, whom it was difficult to find, their fright having made them hide themselves the moment they had been let go by the russians. At length, however, the diligence of his men discovered them all but one, the loss of whom the rest deplored in the most passionate terms. Sir Archibald concluding that she must have been carried off by some of the ravishers, while the rest stopped to attack him, was at a loss what to do. It was in vain to think of overtaking them without some guide to direct his pursuit; and whom to get he knew not.

“ In this perplexity he bethought himself of inquiring whether some intelligence might not be gained among those who had fallen by his sword, if they

were not as yet quite dead. He was not disappointed. From one of them he learned their place of rendezvous; and that their leader had borne away his prey, sir Archibald had conjectured. The generous knight was alarmed at her danger, and, ordering two of his men to conduct the disconsolate damsels back to the Saracen camp, set off himself with the rest in search of her.

" The place to which he was directed was a cave in the darkest recess of a wood, at a considerable distance from him. The day was now far spent, and the way so difficult to be found, that it was night before they reached the cavern. Sir Archibald waited not to demand entrance, but drawing his sword, rushed boldly in. Heaven seemed to have delayed him to the moment that would make his coming most critical. Inflamed with brutal passion, the miscreant, when he could not persuade the damsel to compliance, had resolved to gratify his base desires by force. Her cries reached the ear of Archibald as he entered the cave, and directed him to her rescue; which he effected just as her strength was exhausted in the struggle, and she lay a defenceless prey to the spoiler. With one stroke he severed the wretch's head from his body; when, raising the astonished maiden from the ground, he strove to restore her spirits by the most tender and encouraging assurances of safety and protection.

" At first she threw her eyes wildly round the dreary cave, and, filled with the horror of the scenes she had just gone through, could scarcely believe her senses at she was delivered. At length recovering power to speak, " What man, or rather what angel art thou (said she in the Saracen tongue, fixing her eyes upon him as he stood without his helmet, which he had pulled off when he had first raised her from the ground) " whom heaven has thus miraculously sent to save me from ruin? The benefit is so great, that I had rather think the latter, as the obligation is too much to owe to man."

" Lady (answered he in the same language, which he had learned in the war) I am a man! a sinful

" man, who knows it is his duty to succour virtue in  
" distress."

" A man! (replied she earnestly) Say then of what  
" lineage and country art thou come, that I may study  
" the most acceptable reward for thy courtesy and va-  
" lour!"

" Thou seest before thee (returned he) lady, a  
" Christian knight, whose faith makes virtue a duty  
" and looks not for reward."

" A Christian! Gracious Heaven! (exclaimed the  
" lady, as recovering herself after a long pause) Par-  
" don, courteous stranger, the ravings of a distracted  
" brain! No reward can return the obligation I am un-  
" der to you, and yet I must sue for more; I must en-  
" treat you to conduct me directly to the Saracen camp,  
" and restore me to my distressed parent, who now la-  
" ments the loss of his only child.

" Talk not of rewards, most beauteous lady, (said  
" the knight gazing in rapture on her) the pleasure of  
" doing you a service is its own reward. All I require  
" is to know your name; and O! tell me, I conjure  
" you, (continued he, falling on his knees before her)  
" if it be possible for a soldier of no ignoble birth or  
" fame, to make the offer of his honest heart accept-  
" able to you."

" Brave knight (answered she) an heart like thine  
" worthy of the most exalted maid's acceptance; but  
" there are insuperable obstacles to thy desire. As for  
" my name it would avail you nought to know it. Let  
" me adjure you therefore, by that virtue which your  
" soul reveres, to desist from any farther enquiry  
" about me; and conveying me to the camp of your  
" enemies, there to leave me to my fate."

" Thy will, O beauteous arbitress of my destiny  
" (replied he) is a law to thy devoted servant. I o-  
" bey thee; but first permit me to pour out the fu-  
" ness of my soul."—Then taking her fair hand as he  
" kneeled before her, and holding it between his, " Ad-  
" cept my homage, sovereign lady of my heart! (said  
" he) and receive me from this hour for thy true and  
" constant knight; and by this sacred pledge I swear

(touching)

(touching her hand devoutly with his lips) no other  
caine shall ever raise a wish in my breast contrary to  
the faith I here plight unto thee." —

" And in return I promise thee, most valiant and  
right gentle knight, (said she) that the remembrance  
of thy courtesy shall never be erased from my grate-  
ful heart ; nor any other man supplant thee in that  
regard which it is lawful for a virgin to feel for her  
deliverer."

" Comforted by this kind promise, sir Archibald  
took her by the hand, and leading her to the mouth  
of the cavern, mounted her behind him on his able  
steed, and bore her without accident to the Saracen  
camp.

" As soon as they came to the most advanced guard  
dismounted, and pulling a costly jewel from her  
ear, " Wear this (said she tenderly) in remem-  
brance of one who will never forget her generous  
deliverer."

" I accept, dearest lady, (answered he bending his  
knee to the earth) a gift made precious by thy hand,  
and promise to wear it as a badge of thy authority  
over my heart ; as thou, if I have found favour in  
thy sight, wilt also condescend to take this ring from  
thy servant. My honoured mother bestowed it with  
her dying benediction, and enjoined me never to give  
it till I could truly give my heart along with it." —  
kindly took the pledge of his love, and put it on  
hand directly ; then, bidding him adieu, advanced  
to the guard, who instantly conducted her where  
commanded them.

" Sir Archibald stood for some time, unable to stir ;  
eyes followed her as far as he could see through  
shades of night, and he listened to her steps till the  
sound insensibly died away from his ear. Awaking at  
length from a trance, " Unhappy Archibald (said  
she, striking his hand upon his grief-swollen breast)  
what misfortunes has thy wayward fate reserved  
thee ? Never till this day did my heart feel the  
power of beauty. I laughed at love, and called his  
boldage folly ; but amply has the tyrant now a-  
venged his cause, and pierced me with his sharpest,

“ most envenomed lance. Ye maids of Caledonia, who  
 “ oft have wept your slighted charms, and called the  
 “ heart of Archibald insensible, now triumph in his  
 “ fall. He loves without a ray of hope to promise him  
 “ success.”

“ Thus did he consume the remaining part of the  
 night in fruitless lamentation, till his followers at the  
 approach of morning reminded him, that it was necessary for him to return to the Christian camp.

“ From this hour his heart was a stranger to happiness. Did he know even who the object of his wifery was, he might at least have pleased himself with forming imaginary schemes for obtaining her love; but her command, which he most religiously observed, precluded him from making any enquiries about her, as his men's ignorance of the Saracen language had also prevented their learning any things from the damsels whom they had conducted to the camp.

---

### C H A P. XV.

*The history of Sir ARCHIBALD, and ZELIDE, prince of Armenia, continued.*

“ **B**UT though his private peace was thus poison'd, it slackened not his attention to the duties of war. On the contrary, the troubles of his mind, making him weary of life, he eagerly sought every occasion of loosing it with honour. In the last unfortunate action between Lewis and the Saracens, sir Archibald, at the head of his bonny lads, charged the infidels with such impetuosity, that he broke into the main body of their army; and had he been followed with equal spirit by the other squadrons under his command, might possibly have altered the fate of the unhappy day. But envy, which always follows supererogation, had inflamed the hearts of certain French lords, who thought themselves eclipsed by his fame, to such a degree against him, that when they saw him break like a torrent into the battle of the enemy, instead of following his steps with emulative virtue, they basely drew

ack, and gave the infidels an opportunity of surrounding him, and his few brave men.

" Thrice did he penetrate so far through their numbers, as to seize the imperial standard ; but the multitude, whom dread of such a disgrace made throw themselves desperately between him and it, as often bore him back. At length, collecting all his force for one last effort, he burst in irresistably among them, and seizing with one hand had raised the other to smite the chief, whose vigorous gripe with-held it from him, when a man hurled by a dastard slave who dared not approach within the reach of his sword, felled him to the ground. The base herd instantly rushed in, and were ready to wreak their cowardly revenge upon his defenceless body, when the chief, who respected valour, though in an enemy, and judged by the richness of his armour that it must be some person of note, whose ransom would well reward his humanity, interposed ; and, discovering that he still breathed, ordered him to be removed to his own tent, and there taken proper care of. With Sir Archibald fell the spirit of the Christian army, and left the infidels an easy and compleat victory.

" He had not been long in the tent of the chief, when, by the assistance of those into whose care he had been given, he began to recover his senses. Opening his eyes, he looked around in silent astonishment some time ; and then turning to the attendants who were busied about him, he asked them courteously where he was, and to whom indebted for such friendly treatment ? But they laid their hands upon their mouths, to let him know that they must not converse with him. This increased his perplexity. The tent, and the habit of those who administered such kind assistance to him, shewed him that he was in the hands of the enemy ; but that very assistance, so contrary to their usual practice, heightened his astonishment still more and more.

" The next morning he found himself so well recovered, that he desired permission to wait upon his beauteous captor to return him thanks, and learn what ransom was demanded, which he doubted not but Lewis would readily

readily pay. The chief received him courteously, and informing him of the total defeat of the Christian army, gave him to understand that his hopes of liberty were an end.

“ The effect which this account had on him was easily perceived. The manly fortitude that sat upon his brow before, gave place to listless dejection. “ Thy will be done, O God!” (exclaimed he with a loud sigh) then fixed his eyes upon the ground.

“ The chief, who imagined that his grief arose from the thought of his captivity, encouraged him with assurances that he should not receive unworthy treatment. But sir Archibald soon shewed him that his distress arose from a more exalted motive. “ Think not, most courteous and noble lord” (said he, raising his eyes slowly from the ground and fixing them on the chief, with a look that shewed a soul overburthened but not broken by woe) “ think not that my grief is for myself. Liberty is the jewel of every virtuous soul; without the sentiments of honour, generosity and courage are a torture. But still I mourn from a more extensive cause. I mourn the misfortunes of my royal master, the princely and pious Lewis. I mourn the defeat of the armies of the Lord. I am but a worm, an atom in the creation, unworthy of a thought of such a scene of ruin.”

“ The chief was struck with such greatness of soul, and, repeating his kind consolation, demanded who sir Archibald was, and what rank he held in the army of Lewis? But the high-minded knight informed the resolution of concealing his name and quality, to hide the disgrace which he thought his captivity would reflect upon his noble house and country. “ No! (said he to himself) never shall it be said that sir Archibald is a slave! that a noble Scot was forced to bend the knee to barbarous infidels. Let me perish unknown, and let my reproach die with me.”

Then, as if recollecting himself, “ I am no more than a private knight, O noble lord, (answered he) whom a desire of fame brought to the

fatal war. I was not born in the liegance of royal Lewis, nor bore any high rank in his armies. I led a few brave youths, the followers of my wayward fortune, to the field, who all, as I suppose, have fallen with honour; and O! that I had shared their glorious fate; but I was unworthy, and am reserved for slavery."

"There is a sympathy between noble souls, which soon unites them. The chief, who before admired the valour, now loved the virtue of his captive. He directly received him into his intimacy, and was so struck with the charms of his conversation, that he opened to him all the secrets of his soul. As they sat together one day, beguiling the heat of the noon-tide hours, in pleasing discourse, the chief paused for some time as if lost in thought; then starting in a kind of transport, "It shall be so; (said he) 'tis Heaven inspires the thought." — Then addressing himself to sir Archibald, "Selim, (that was the name he had given him) thou must go and plead the cause of thy friend. That eloquence which can charm the fiercest passions of the soul to peace, can surely kindle the more gentle ones of pity and desire. I love, most warmly love; but the object of my wishes is insensible to my pain, nor will listen to my intreaties. Go then and soften her heart, paint my passion in proper colours, and teach her to make a just return to it. Attempt not to dissuade me from the thought. It is Heaven that inspires, and I will pursue it."

"Sir Archibald, who knew by sad experience that love is an over-match for reason, answered, that, far from contradicting his will, he was ready to obey him in any thing he should command; and only desired to know how his weak endeavours were to be applied. The chief embracing him tenderly, "I will inform you of every thing, (said he) and will not doubt of your success. You must know that, about three moons since, the guard of one of the advanced posts brought to my tent a damsel most richly attired, who they said had come to them just before the

"morning.

“ morning-watch, and required to be conducted to  
“ the commander of the night. The moment she en-  
“ tered and cast her eyes upon me, “ Achmet, (said  
“ she, with an air of dignity that awed my soul)  
“ lead me to the pavilion of thy master. I am Zelide,  
“ his daughter, who was this day surprized by the  
“ enemy, as I walked along the banks of the rivulet;  
“ and have now recovered my liberty in a manner not  
“ necessary to be told.

“ I was so dazzled at the sight of her beauty, for  
“ she had no veil on, that I was some time before  
“ had power to make her any answer. At length,  
“ prostrating myself at her feet, Forgive, O beauti-  
“ ous princess, (said I) the ignorance of thy slaves,  
“ who have not paid the respect due to thy sublime  
“ state.” — Rise, (answered she) and lead me to my  
“ father; I forgive every thing.” —

“ Encouraged by this condescension, I ventured to  
“ rise, and taking her hand, which she graciously  
“ held to me, conducted her to the pavilion of the  
“ Armenian monarch. The joy that her return  
“ raised can no more be described than the situation  
“ of my heart. All was tumult, exacy, and mad-  
“ ness.”

“ As soon as I had delivered her into her father's  
“ hands, I prepared to retire; when calling to me,  
“ Stay, Achmet, (said the inraptured monarch) and  
“ receive the reward of thy service. I have sworn  
“ to give Zelide to the man who should rescue her  
“ out of the hands of the ravishers, and restore her  
“ to me. Her maidens have told me what noble spi-  
“ rit you exerted for her. Here, Zelide, take an hu-  
“ band who has deserved you.”

“ I prostrated myself at his feet in transport, and  
“ embraced his knees, unable to express the joy of my  
“ full heart; when the princess replied to her father,  
“ The merits of Achmet are sufficiently great, without  
“ assuming those of another. I owe my liberty to an  
“ unknown hand.”

“ It is impossible to express what I felt at hearing  
“ her say this. The manner in which she spoke con-

“ vinced

vinced me that her heart was not inclined in my favour; and I knew the fondness of her father too well, to think that he would put any constraint upon her inclinations. However, I yielded to the impulse of my passion, and throwing myself at her feet, "Revoke not, O beauteous princess, (said I) the gracious words of my lord; nor reject an heart that is devoted to thee." —

"Desist, Achmet, (said the monarch sternly) my hasty vow is saved; and the hands of Zelida to be obtained only on the terms proposed before." — Awed at these words, I retired in dejection equal to the height of my late short-lived hopes; and from that day has my heart been a prey to despair.

"The assistance which I now require from you is this: In pious gratitude to Heaven, for her escape from bondage, Zelida has obtained permission from her father to relieve the captives of the war. For this purpose they are ordered to repair to a certain place before her pavilion, where she sees them through the filken curtains of her tent, and frequently converses with such as have any thing particular in their appearance to excite her curiosity. Thither you shall go; and I promise myself that you will plead my cause with success, if it so happens that she enters into conversation with you."

"Had the chief attended to the effect which his story d upon sir Archibald, he would not have been so ready to send him as his advocate. Every circumstance convinced him that the princess was the object of his love, whom he had despaired of discovering, and ed him with emotions which he could not suppress. recovering himself, however, time enough to escape the observations of Achmet, whose mind was too intent on his own story to give much heed to any thing else. It is my duty, (said he) to obey thy commands; and diffident though I am of the abilities which your partiality bestows upon me, I am yet ready to undertake any thing which you think can conduce to your happiness."

"Achmet

" Achmet again embraced him, and informing him at what time and where he should wait upon Zelide next morning, left him, while he went himself to attend his sovereign, in the course of his duty.

" No sooner was sir Archibald alone, than he began to reflect on the commission which he had undertaken, and the distressing situation he was in. In the first emotions of his high spirit he blamed himself for not having avowed his passion, and asserted his prior claim; but a consideration of his unhappy state immediately checked this rash thought, and the desire of meeting the dear object of his love at any rate, determined him to go, and trust the event to fate. " What shall I do? (said he) Shall I plead for the love of Achmet, and destroy my own hopes? Or shall I betray his confidence, and speak only for myself?" Then pausing a while, " I will do neither; (he continued) if nature forbids the former, honour equally opposes the latter. Never shall it be said that sir Archibald broke faith with man. I will represent his love with fidelity; I will declare my own with honest truth, and leave the decision to herself." — — — Pleased with this determination, his heart grew lighter; and the thought of meeting Zelide filled him with joy, to which he had been long a stranger.

---

### CHAP. XVI.

*Continuation of the history of Sir ARCHIBALD and ZELIDE, princess of Armenia.*

" **H**AVING received his last instructions from Achmet, sir Archibald went at the appointed hour next morning to the royal pavilion. Though he was habited in the humble weeds of a slave, there was something in his appearance that spoke his noble birth, and prejudiced every heart in his favour. His stature was above the common size of men, his limbs turned in the exactest symmetry of strength and beau-

His auburn locks flowed in ringlets to the middle of his back, and his dark-blue eyes sparkled with sensibility and manly spirit; while a gloom of melancholy, suited to his present station, softened their fire, and drew a pallid veil over the ruddy bloom which youth had painted on his cheeks.

"He had not stood long with his eyes fixed on the ground, and his heart throbbing with the most anxious sensations, when an eunuch came to distribute the relief which the princess sent to the captives, ordering such of them as she had pointed out to him to advance to the entrance of her tent, that she might enquire into the nature of their particular distresses.

"The state of sir Archibald's heart, when the eunuch passed him by unnoticed, may be easily conceived. His high hopes sunk at once. "She knows me not!" (said he to himself) or she scorns to know! Mistaken Achmet! to think that I could have any influence upon her."

He continued these melancholy reflections while the princess was examining some of the other captives, and was departing with them, when the eunuch beckoned to him to advance to the tent. His emotions now were stronger than he could bear. He scarce had power to obey the summons. As soon as he approached the curtain, "Christian, (said a voice from behind him) how long hast thou been a captive and to whom?"

"Most gracious princess, (answered he trembling and in agitation, that almost deprived him of utterance) for so I am instructed to address you, I lost my liberty in the late battle that proved so fatal to the unhappy Lewis; and my poor services belong to the illustrious Achmet."

"To Achmet! (replied she) Great honour must he have acquired by the conquest; and should treat such a captive as thou appearest to be with uncommon courtesy!"

The honour of Achmet (returned he) wants not to mean an addition. Thy slave was the captive of my host. As for my treatment, it is that of a man.

"An

“ An heart that is softened with love like Achmet  
“ cannot want the gentlest virtues of humanity.”

“ Thou speakest of that passion (said the prince  
“ with a voice of sympathy. I suppose thy own heart  
“ is not free from it, and that the loss of thy liberty  
“ imbibited by that of a wife or mistress in thy native  
“ land.”

“ Thy slave is not married, most gracious prince  
“ (answered he) nor had my heart felt the power  
“ of love before I saw these fatal plains.”

“ Then it should seem (continued she) that some  
“ of our beauties have subdued you to him. How long  
“ have you borne his yoke, and who has bent your  
“ stubborn neck to it?”

“ The captivity of my heart, O sovereign lady! (she  
“ swered he) is scarce three moons old ; but the pecu-  
“ liar severity of it has made that time an age.  
“ cut off every hope, the very name of the person who  
“ chains I wear is hidden from me in impenetrable  
“ darkness.”

“ That’s hard, indeed ; (said she) but true for a  
“ tude is above despair. Perhaps you may find her  
“ Come just at the close of evening to this place, you  
“ will meet a person who will inform you of  
“ strange things ; but mention not a word of this  
“ Achmet. Adieu ! Be discreet, be resolute, and  
“ happy.”

“ The surprize with which this conversation struck  
sir Archibald was so great, that he more than once  
questioned himself whether it must not be only an  
illusive dream. Satisfied, however, at length, that  
it was real, he retired to his own quarter, among  
attendants of Achmet, till his emotions should subside,  
and he could recollect himself sufficiently to appear  
before him without danger of discovering what had hap-  
pened. He threw himself into a corner of the tent,  
covering himself with a carpet that he might not be  
disturbed, lay motionless and lost in thought.  
He had not lain long when two of the domestic slaves  
of Achmet, natives of Greece, came into the tent, and  
perceiving that any person was present, entered into  
a conversation upon murdering their lord, and flying

their own country with the booty which they should be  
to plunder in the confusion caused by his death.  
After considering upon several methods, they at length  
resolved to poison him in a bowl of sherbet, which one  
of them, who was his cup-bearer, undertook to give  
him that very evening, while the other should pack up  
his gold and rich jewels which were in his care, ready  
for them to carry off. Having thus concerted the  
plan, they immediately went to prepare for the execu-  
tion of it.

The first mention of this horrid design awoke all  
the attention of sir Archibald. He listened to their dis-  
cussion without giving them any alarm; and as soon as  
they departed gave thanks to heaven for directing him  
to that place so opportunely, to save the life of his pre-  
ferred master, and so return the obligation he owed him; arising  
therefore, he went to the tent of Achmet, who  
was just at the same time.

The moment the chief cast his eyes upon sir Archi-  
bald, he called him to him, and waving his hand to  
his attendants to withdraw, "Selim (said he, his eyes  
still listening with rapture) congratulate your happy lord.  
My gracious sovereign has this day blessed my hopes  
with a promise of the hand of Zelide; and, as if heaven  
meant to endear you still farther to me, has made  
the rescuing of the royal standard from your hand  
the glorious cause of giving me the preference to all  
my competitors. Have you been with the princess?  
Have you mentioned my love to her? The only delay  
to my happiness now is, to obtain her consent. O  
tell me therefore by saying that she listens to my love."

I have mentioned it to her, answered (sir Archi-  
bald, who had need for all his presence of mind on  
such a trying occasion) in the most affecting manner,  
but it is too soon to expect the satisfaction you desire.  
Such time and many words are requisite to warm a  
virgin's heart."

For this you shall have ample opportunity, (replied  
Achmet) to-morrow I will send you with a present  
to her; and every morning it shall be your pleasing  
task to carry her the tribute of my love."

" The

“ The confidence with which Achmet, said this was a pain to the honest heart of sir Archibald, as he knew he must necessarily disappoint it. To change therefore to a topic more pleasing to him, “ You saved my life” (said he) and now heaven shews its approbation “ that generous action, by making me the means “ saving yours.” — He then informed him of the conspiracy he had just discovered in so providential a manner, and gave him advice how to detect it in the very moment of execution, to make the punishment of these wretches more signal.

“ The soul of Achmet was struck with terror at the account. The near hopes of happiness which possessed him at this time armed every thing that might defend them with double terrors. He embraced sir Archibald in a transport, and resigned himself entirely to his direction, his own mind being in too great an agitation to attend to any thing.

“ As the time for executing their flagitious design was just arrived, Achmet went to take his evening repast, and seating himself on the carpet, without a appearance of suspicion, called for some cooling beverage to slack his thirst. The cup-bearer, who had every thing prepared, presented him the bowl, when sir Archibald, who watched his looks and plainly perceived the anxiety of guilt in his face, made a sign agreed upon to Achmet, and then went into the inner tent, where he found the other loading himself with gold and jewels of his lord. Dragging him forth, therefore, with this indisputable evidence of his guilt upon him, as soon as he came into the presence of Achmet he seized the cup-bearer also, who stood panting with impatience to see his lord drink the fatal mixture, which he yet held untaasted in his hand.

“ The accomplices no sooner saw each other apprehended in this manner, than they sunk into the spondency of conscious guilt, and waited, pale and trembling, for the fate which hung over them. “ My creatures, (said Achmet rising from his seat in a rage) “ what could prompt you to this wickedness? Speak “ declare this moment at whose instigation you have

the base attempt ; or torture shall wring the secret from your bursting hearts."

The wretches were unable to make any reply, when sir Archibald interfering, " Mighty lord, (said he) the nature of their crime shews it was all their own ; and points out the punishment proper for them. Let them drink the poison they had prepared for you, and perish by their own device. Base as they are, remember they are men ; nor tempt them to aggravate the guilt with which their miserable souls are loaded by accusing the innocent."

" Be it so, (answered the chief) their fate is in your hands."

Sir Archibald upon this took the bowl, and drinking the horrid contents, gave it to the trembling wretches, whose lives, torn from them by the most painful torments, soon paid the price of their guilt. He met then, embracing his deliverer once more, ready to try if he could calm the agitations of his soul by

---

## C H A P. XVII.

*History of Sir ARCHIBALD and ZELIDE, princess of Armenia, concluded.*

THE time when the princess had ordered the attendance of sir Archibald was now arrived ; therefore hastened to the appointed place, where he not waited long when an eunuch coming up and conning to him said, " Be discreet, be resolute, and be happy."

Sir Archibald, who well remembered these words, led him, without hesitation or reply, into the royal boudoir, where he was led through several sumptuous rooms, one within another, till his guide, stopping and making a signal to him to wait there, left him. He waited long, when a female covered with a veil entered, seating herself on a sofa, " Christian," (said she, in

a low

a low voice, and beckoning to him to come near her  
“ the damsel whom you rescued from the ravisher  
“ the cave, desires you should know that she retains  
“ grateful sense of your courtesy and virtue.”

“ Gentle lady, (said he in a voice of rapture)  
“ cept the warmest thanks of your servant for this  
“ nigh condescension; and, O! compleat the favour  
“ by telling her, that her devoted slave lives only in  
“ hope of seeing her again, and pouring out the ful-  
“ of his heart before her.”

“ Her heart (answered she) perhaps is not less  
“ than yours; but before she can comply with what  
“ you desire, it is proper she should know who you  
“ are, and what your rank was in your native land.

“ My rank, (replied he, with a sigh) most cour-  
“ ous lady, was noble, scarcely inferior to royal  
“ the honour of my ancient house unstained.”

“ Say then, (returned she) if she whom you pro-  
“ fess to love should stoop from royalty itself to life  
“ to your suit, what would you do to merit such  
“ favour? Would you forego your country, renown  
“ the worship of your ancestors, and, happy in the  
“ compence of her love, and of the state to which  
“ would raise you, swear you would never think  
“ either?”

“ Sir Archibald was struck with such horror at the  
proposal, that it was some time before he was able  
make any reply. At length, as if awaking from  
dream, “ Support me, heaven! (exclaimed he with  
“ a sigh that seemed to burst his heart) Support me,  
“ and proportion the trials of your creature to  
“ strength!” —

“ Then turning to the female, “ There is nothing  
“ lady, (said he) within the power of man to do,  
“ suffer, which I should not attempt with joy for it  
“ an inestimable recompence; nothing which did  
“ clash with honour or virtue. But what you pro-  
“ would overturn both; and should I be tempted  
“ comply, I were unworthy of a reward so  
“ earned.”

Is this your answer? (replied she with an accent of indignation). Can you pretend to feel the power of love, and yet to slight its object for the idle fictions of superstitious priests? Can you mention honour, and prefer subjection to royalty? Think better; nor blast your ripening hopes with such a mean and ungrateful choice. Search your heart well, your fate depends upon the word you speak; for, never more shall you be asked the question."

Burst then, O wretched heart! (sighed he) and let a period to your torture. To live without my love is impossible; and heaven itself forbids the terms in which alone I can obtain her. Tell her, kindly, that, dearly as my heart adores her beauties, a principle higher even than love, and stronger than ambition, places an insuperable bar between us. But say at the same time, that the word which thus gives up my hopes, gives up my hated life also. I must not have her, and I cannot live without her."

Virtuous Christian, (said she, lifting up her veil, and discovering her beauties to his ravished sight) you provest thyself worthy of the best blessings of heaven by this thy noble attachment to its laws. Beyond the object of thy love, who glories in an equal me: yet had thy heart wavered in the cause of true, I should have disdained the dishonourable sacrifice, and quitted thee for ever. Restraine your raptures, and hear me for a moment. You know not how your virtues have subdued, or what you must tempt to obtain her. I am Zelide, the only daughter of the monarch of Armenia. My ancestors long flourished in the name of Christians; but unable to resist the barbarous Saracens, according to the policy of the world, they renounced their faith to preserve their power.

My father, mistakenly attached to the religion of Mahomet, in which he was thus bred, led his forces against the invasion of Lewis; and, to excite the anger of his generals, declared, that he would bewitch me, the heiress of his throne, in marriage upon

"on

“ on him who should deserve best in the war. The emulation which this raised was often fatally experienced by their enemies; but still their merits were so equal, that none could claim his promise until the last battle, when Achmet's recovering the royal standard from the enemy unhappily decided in his favour. Too soon I learned the unwelcome news, but still by my intreaties prevailed upon my father to suspend or at least conceal his determination, on this fatal day, when all his generals soliciting him together to put an end to their importunities, declared his choice. What canst thou do to avert this misfortune? Canst thou by any means accomplish our escape to thy native land? Gold and jewels in abundance I can bring, to procure us means for our journey, and make our retirement happy. To thy honour I am bold to trust myself, to aspire to a more exalted state than to be thy wife; for though I have been obliged to profess the religion of Mahomet, in my heart I am a Christian. My mother, who was a native of Circassia, believed and instructed me in that holy faith; to preserve which I promised her, in her last moments, to give up every thought of worldly grandeur. My soul is grieved to disobey, and leave my father; but a superior deity calls me.”

“ O beauteous princess, (said sir Archibald, prostrating himself at her feet) how shall the labours of my life make a return for this happiness, this honour?”

“ Restrain your raptures (replied the princess) time is too precious for them now. Three days' spite only have I been able to obtain from my father; before they are expired we must escape from hence, or I am for ever lost. I leave the man of our flight to you. In this casket is some gold. More, with the richest of my jewels, will I bring with me to-morrow night, as soon as darkness favours our design, to the hermit's cell on the brow of the hill, westward of the camp. There let

meet thee with all the necessary means for our flight. One only companion shall I bring with me. Adieu." After this, the princess departed, and the eunuch entered and conducted sir Archibald back through the royal piazza to the place where he had first met him, who immediately returned to the quarters of Achmet.

" He laid himself down, as if to rest ; but spent the remainder of the night in forming schemes for his intended flight ; but the difficulties which attended all could devise drove him almost to despair. At length he resolved upon one that appeared least liable to disappointment. As soon as Achmet arose he went to him, and accosting him with an air of perplexity and distress, " I come (said he) a suppliant to thy compassion, O generous and princely Achmet. If ever thy servant has found favour in thy sight, listen to the request of my heart. I was troubled on my bed this night, and my soul was terrified by visions. The object of my love, whose image is never absent from my mind, appeared before me in agonies of grief. " Fly (said she) to my rescue ! My father, deaf to my intreaties and regardless of my distress, prepares to give my hand to another. O my and save me ! Save us both from ruin and despair." — I awoke in dismay, and in the anguish of my soul am come to thee. Permit me, assist me to go to my native land ; and, on the faith of a true knight, I will send you the ransom which you shall require."

I require not a ransom for the liberty of my reverie, (answered Achmet) and willingly consent to our return as soon as my nuptials with the princess shall have confirmed my happiness. You must not leave me till you have seen and shared in my joy."

O name not happiness or joy (replied sir Archibald) before a wretch sinking in despair ; the sight of my misery would damp your joys. By all your fondest hopes I conjure you, therefore, not to delay me a moment. Let me be gone this very night ; for something warns my soul never to close my eyes, till I have set out on this important journey."

“ Far be it from me (said Achmet, moved at the poignancy of his distress) to oppose the intimation of thy better genius. Go in peace; and may thy journey be successful. If aught in my power can contribute to it, demand my help with freedom.”

“ O generous prince, (answered the knight) the goodness overwhelms my soul, and makes my parting from thee, even on so dear an occasion, painful. If thou wilt give the impression of thy signet, I will set out with two, the poor remains of all my faithful followers, whom I this day have found among the captives, as sent by thee on some important business; and trust the conduct of my steps to Heaven.” — To this proposal Achmet not only agreed, but also gave him some gold, to make provision for his journey, and then dismissed him with a tender embrace.

“ Sir Archibald spent the rest of the day in procuring swift and able horses, with every other convenience requisite for his journey; and at the appointed hour repaired to the hermit’s cell, where the prince soon after arrived, disguised in the habit of a man, and attended by one of her most favourite maidens in the same dress. The illustrious fugitives set out directly, passing all the guards by virtue of the signet of Achmet, and made such expedition, travelling through private and unfrequented ways, that by the dawn of morning they thought themselves safe from danger or pursuit. As soon as it was light, they stopped by the side of a stream that ran through a thick wood, where they refreshed themselves, and their horses, and rested till the close of the day, sir Archibald watching while his princess slept.

“ In this manner they continued their journey under the immediate protection of Heaven, till they arrived at Constantinople, chusing the road least liable to suspicion, to baffle pursuit; there they directly embarked on board a French ship, which landed them at Marseilles, from whence they journeyed by land to Rochelle, and there hired a ship that carried them to Scotland.

“ The

The joy raised by the arrival of sir Archibald was confined to his father's house. The whole kingdom, which had shared in his glory, shared in it. His aged mother, who seemed to have lived only to resign his honours to his worthy heir, was unable to support the emotions of his rapture, and expired in his embraces, after having bestowed his benediction on his son, and the partner of his escape, to whom earl Archibald was wedded in the holy bonds of wedlock, as soon as he had performed the last duties to the honoured remains of his father; for her delicacy had not suffered her to speak of marriage, till she was arrived at the end of her days.

Prudence and modesty suggested it to this illustrious pair to conceal the countess's high descent, that they might avoid the vain parade of ceremony, and enjoy their lives in retirement, in which earl Archibald's sense of honour, in concealing his name and country when a captive, secured them from discovery.

The only cloud that seemed to over-cast their happiness arose from the pious concern of the countess to gain some account of her father. To procure this, she sent one of his faithful men, who had accompanied her in his escape, who undertook not only to gain his tidings of him, but also, by some means or other, to lighten his sorrow, by letting him know that she was happy. He set out in the dress of a pilgrim, and performed his journey with success, bringing her word, which struck with her flight, which he looked upon as punishment from heaven for his professing the religion of Mahomet, against the admonitions of his conscience, which was secretly inclined to the Christian faith. He had resigned his crown to Achmet, and dedicated the remainder of his days to Heaven, in a monastery.

This account compleated the happiness of the countess, who blessed the wise dispensations of providence, which had thus made her the cause of her father's conversion. The earl designed never to have quitted his sweet retirement; but the stronger attachment of duty once more called him forth into the busy

world. His sovereign dying suddenly, and leaving infant heir, several of the nobles, stirred up by impious ambition, strove to get the royal infant into their hands that they might murder him, and so usurp the throne: but the vigilance of his mother prevented their designs, and conveyed him secretly to France.

"Arouzed by the distress of his sovereign and country, which was now a prey to all the misery of anarchy, earl Archibald arose, and by his valour and prudent conduct soon restored peace. The people expressed their gratitude for this service, with one voice offered the crown; but he refused it with noble disdain, obliging them to swear allegiance to their right prince, recalled and placed him on the throne of his ancestors.

---

### C H A P. XVIII.

*Anecdotes of a royal family concluded. Several instances of uncommon loyalty rewarded in the common man with some reflections interesting to those whom they concern.*

**T**HE descendants of earl Archibald followed in the steps in the paths of honour and virtue. In the days of the unfortunate MARY, whose sufferings could not even with her life, her fame being still maligned, extenuate the injustice of her fate, the noble earl, of our house, stood firm in the cause of injured justice, sacrificing the greater part of his ample possessions, to support his royal mistress.

"When JAMES succeeded to the rights which proved so fatal to his mother, those services were forgotten, and his favours lavished on a set of upstart hungry parasites: but not discouraged by this ingratitude, when his ill-fated son wanted the assistance of his loyal subjects, in the impious contest between ENGLISH and their sovereign, which cost him his sacred life, again our house stood forth, a noble party

unshaken loyalty, and were the greatest sufferers in cause.

" At the restoration of the monarchy, they met the same reward as they had before from the grand-sons of CHARLES; nor reaped any other benefit from the happy event, than the gratification of the loyalty, which was the ruling principle of their lives.

" Gold is purified by fiery trials. This only made their virtues shine with brighter lustre. They shewed the same attachment to the son as they had to his father; and disdaining to submit to power which they looked upon as unnaturally usurped, followed misguided steps, when he abandoned his throne, into a foreign land, exerting their loyalty in service to his person, Heaven should point out a propitious moment for accomplishing their hopes of recovering for him at least the ancient crown of his ancestors; a crown which they wore with distinguished glory, till Heaven in its wrath joined another to it, greater indeed in wealth and power, but not of greater honour.

" Since that fatal period our glory has shone with diminished splendor; and we have been looked down upon as dependants, by those who dreaded us before our rivals; and at length, to compleat the ruin of our blest country, some of her degenerate sons, seduced by bribery and vain hopes of power, sealed their own infamy, and her disgrace, by formally renouncing every shadow of royalty, and giving up the royal style and title of a kingdom which had flourished for a long succession of ages, before that to which they basely thus betrayed its rights had even gained a name.

" The venal and inconstant English, a mingled race, made up of every people under heaven, and those whom their example had debauched, may practice and applaud such corruption; but Scotland's true-born honest sons will ever watch occasion to shake off the shameful yoke, and restore the honour of their country, by restoring to its throne a race of kings descended from themselves.

“ Educated in these principles, though under power which I abhorred, it was natural for me to seize the first opportunity of drawing my sword in the cause of my rightful sovereign. I joined in the tempt made by his son, and was a sharer in his unparalleled sufferings.

“ I had been too active in his interest to escape unnoticed. This precluded every thought of living in my own country, even if I could stoop to dissemble my principles, and submit to the prevailing powers. The honour of my ancestors was now the only inheritance which I derived from them. In the difficulties therefore which such a situation was subject to, my natural recourse was to the profession of arms, the only profession which would not be a disgrace to my blood, un-stained from endless ages by the mean arts of industry and to whom should I offer my sword but to the prince to whom my royal master had himself fled in his distress, and who, I flatter myself, has had no reason to repine of the asylum he afforded me; for though my actions have not been yet rewarded by fortune, my name is unknown to fame.

“ This honest representation will, to every candid mind, remove the prejudices so injuriously entertained against me, and all in my unhappy circumstances. We come not as preferring another country to our own, or striving to supplant the natives in the favours of fortune. Necessity, irresistible necessity, urges our reluctant steps; and we are received and rewarded according to not with the respect of welcome guests, but the liberal and honours due to merit. The coldness of charitableness frowns upon our reproach, and all our services are thought to be over paid by a bare subsistence. Indeed, such are the sentiments which this undeserved treatment inspires, that, did not the short sighted policy of our native country bar our return by injunctions insignificant to them, and impossible to be complied with by us, the ardour of our loyalty would be damped, and many of us gladly go home and live in peace; by which means, if we did not actually become their best subjects, we should at least rid them of the most dangerous enemies.”

The appearance of the morning here put an end to his discourse, which his companion heard without interposition, though with visible indifference, and assented to in the politest manner. When they were relieved, they retired to their respective tents with equal expedition, though on different occasions ; the former to replenish his snuff-box, which he had emptied in the earnestness of his conversation, and the other to wash his neck-cloth and ruffles, and powder his hair, that he might make a proper appearance when he waited upon his general.

---

## C H A P. XIX.

*The difference between fighting battles in the field, and in the cabinet. The happiness of having good friends, with further instances of military equity.*

AS the late miscarriage had made a considerable alteration in the situation of affairs, it was necessary to send notice of it to all the parties engaged in the same cause, that they might regulate their measures accordingly. Nothing could draw a stronger picture of human vanity, than the terms in which this account was given. Instead of owning with candour that they had been severely repulsed, and in danger of an absolute defeat, they only said, " that the enemy having escaped by accident from an attack by which they designed to have gained a decisive victory, they had thought proper to make some alterations in the plan of their operations for the rest of the campaign."

But this vain evasion was instantly seen through ; the steps they were obliged to take in consequence of a disappointment which they affected to treat so lightly, renewed that it was a matter of the most serious nature, and had effectually broke through all their measures for that campaign, on the success of which they had built such sanguine hopes, and exerted their utmost efforts to promote it.

As there was nothing more to be seen here, I took the opportunity of accompanying a courier who was sent on this occasion to another of the armies, confederate to the same cause, the general of which had acquired such a reputation by his conduct, that I expected to find the art of war reduced by him to a regular science, and carried on in a manner worthy of a rational being: how well my expectations were answered, the event will shew.

I found him in his tent, reading over some orders which he had just received from his court. When he had finished them, "What trouble have I (said he to himself) to keep these people from ruining themselves? "A woman has the vapours, and therefore I must fight "a battle to raise her spirits with the news of a victory. "A minister wants to display his talents, and I must take "a town, that he may draw up the articles of capitulation; and yet the least miscarriage in the execution "of their orders, however ill-timed or absurd, will be laid entirely to my charge. This is the happiness of "serving under people who know nothing of the matter; who direct the operations of a campaign in their "closets, draw up armies upon paper, make marches "and form sieges with their fingers in the wine spilt on the table; and fight battles, and beat their enemies as they get drunk. But I am not to be moved "by their humours. I have preserved them hitherto "in spite of themselves, by adhering steadily to my "own opinion; and I will continue to do so, or resign the command, and leave them to their fate." — Saying this, he gave orders to double all the fortifications of his camp, and then returned a summary answer to the minister, that the situation of affairs at that time made it impossible for him to obey his directions.

Such cautious conduct in an army, whose strength seemed almost to make all caution unnecessary, appeared very extraordinary; but a little observation explained the reason of it. In the mean time other occurrences new to me, and strange in speculation, tho' common in the military practice, attracted my attention. As the general

general went to take a view of his entrenchments, and at he might see where it was most proper to add to their strength, according to his own system, he was met by a deputation from the inhabitants of the country, on most interesting occasion. Though he was determined not to take the least notice of any thing they could say, he thought proper to give them an hearing to save appearances.

The person who spoke to him, in the name of the ~~st~~, addressing him with an air of respect, mixed with dignation, " I am sent to your excellency (said he) by the few remaining inhabitants of this wretched country, to implore your commiseration of their distressed state. The misfortunes impossible to be avoided in the seat of a war, have long since consumed their strength, and exhausted all their regular resources. The contributions demanded by your excellency yesterday, exceed their utmost power. The indispensable means of subsistence is all that is left them ; to take the smallest portion from which must make life a curse, and aggravate their miseries to despair. Your sovereign and our's are confederates in this war, the cause of which was originally your's ; and so must the advantage be in the end. We expect nothing. Why then must the weight of it be laid entirely upon us ? If you come for our protection, why do you not drive our enemies away ? If that is not to be done, why not march into their territories, and remove to them a burthen which we can no longer bear ? It were better for us to support but one army, even though that were of enemies, than two. The number of our very friends has eaten us up. We throw ourselves therefore upon your excellency's justice and compassion, and beg an alleviation of distresses, which we are unable to sustain. Represent our case in its proper colours to your sovereign ; and, in the mean time, suspend the execution of orders which overwhelm us with despair."

The general heard this pathetic speech without the least emotion ; and as soon as it was concluded, " I

“ am sorry for your sufferings ; (answered he coldly)  
 “ but the redress of them lies not in my power. You  
 “ must apply to the ministry. If they supply me with  
 “ other means to support a war, I shall be glad ; but  
 “ then I must make use of those in my hands.”

Then turning directly to an officer who stood near him, he ordered the contributions to be levied, without favour or delay.

The unsuccessful advocates had scarce departed when an express arrived from one of his advanced posts to inform him that the enemy had laid all that side of the country in flames, and were just then making some motions which appeared as if they intended to attack him in his entrenchments. His officers heard this account with the highest indignation ; and, confiding in their numbers, expressed their eagerness to prevent such an insult, by marching out directly to meet them.

But the general disregarded their ardour, and firmly resolved to pursue his own system ; “ The enemy should know me too well, (said he) to imagine that they can be taken with such a bait ! When there is nothing more to burn, the flames will go out of themselves. All their braving shall not make me quit the advantage of my situation. The event of battles is uncertain, and often proves contrary to the best founded expectation. Beside, their affairs and ours are in a very different state. A victory might accomplish all their designs, which are disappointed as effectually by delay as by a defeat ; it is therefore right in them to risk every thing. But the contrary is our case ; we might lose every thing by defeat ; and do gain as much by delay, as we could by victory ; so that to put any thing to the hazard were madness. As to the disgrace of our honour, being braved thus, that is nothing. Success alone honours in war. I am sorry, it is true, for the ruin of the country ; but I have other business here besides preserving that, and which I must first attend to ; and I shall think myself happy if I can accomplish it so easy a rate as the ruin of a country that does not belong to us.” — Saying this, he continued his ride.

absolute

bsolutely unmoved at the sight of the flames which rose from all the villages in that particular part of the country from whence he had drawn his subsistence while there was any remaining for him.

There was something so deliberately cruel in protracting the miseries of the innocent in this manner, in order to wear out an enemy whom he was evidently afraid to face in the field, that however consonant it might be to the principles of military equity, and however just his maxim, that "Success alone is honour in war," I turned away from the sight with abhorrence.

---

## C H A P. XX.

*War! War in procinct! The comforts of Greatness. A night scene, with a continuation of it, neither of the most agreeable nature.*

THOUGH my heart was by this time sick of war, curiosity still had force to make me take a view of the army opposed to this, the character of whose commander promised some variety, and more active scenes at least, if not more rational and humane than those I had hitherto seen. "It is not possible (thought I) that the military science, which has been so highly extolled by men of the greatest genius in every age and country, and made the seal of fame, the undisputed title to every advantage of this world, should be such a confused medley of blunders and butchery, carried on headlong, without regard to the most indispensible principles of justice or humanity, or attention to any rational or determined point, beside avarice, or a savage passion for revenge. The generals who make so grand a figure in the writings of poets and historians, could not have been like these; nor the battles, by which they acquired their immortal glory, such fruitless random scenes of blind, and worse than brutal carnage! I have been often cautioned against forming my judgment too hastily."

Having

Having confirmed myself in my resolution by these reflections, I was so desirous to put it in execution, that I would not even stay to travel with any other person, as I had done before; but availing myself of the powers with which the spirit had endowed me, I *wished* myself directly into the enemy's camp,

The first things that struck me here were the eagerness and assiduity of every individual, so different from the listless stupidity and carelessness which had given me such disgust in the other armies. The soldiers seemed by their looks to understand the motives of the war in which they were engaged, and to think themselves interested in the event. Such a sight gave me pleasure. "This (thought I) is something worth beholding! These act like men, by exerting that reason which distinguishes them from brutes; and that cause must be just which so many approve of, and support with their lives."

As I was making these reflections, the commander (whom I found to be their sovereign) passed me, and by his affability and encouraging address added wings to the diligence with which they all strove to execute his commands. I joined him directly, studious to observe every look and action of so extraordinary a person.

He was that morning making a general review of his army, which was drawn out for that purpose. Though every thing was strictly regular, and bore the most martial appearance, I remarked that the monarch frequently sighed as he darted his experienced eye along the ranks. He seemed to look for something which he could not find, and melted almost into tears at the tender youth of the greater part of his troops.

But if the private men appeared young and unexperienced, the officers of every degree wore the opposite characters in their countenances. Birth, riches, or favour, evidently had no place in their promotion. They rose by merit alone, and the soldier who deserved command was sure of obtaining it. This was the most effectual provision which human prudence could make to ensure success; nor did the event disappoint it. If

the inferiority of his numbers hindered his obtaining decisive victories, the excellent discipline of his forces so far balanced that advantage, that his enemies could not prevail against him.

When he had finished the business of the morning, he retired to his tent, and throwing himself, with a fatigued look and discontented air, into a chair, "When will this horrid work be at an end?" (said he) When shall my wearied heart have rest? O ambition, thou madness of misguided man! Thou source of the worst evils which afflict his wretched race! To thee are sacrificed all the tendernesses of humanity, all the most sacred principles of social and moral virtue. And for what? to pursue an unessential phantom, to grasp at a bubble that melts at the touch, and illudes the empty hand! For such is the glory of this world, however highly exalted by prejudice and vanity; the echo of a sound that has passed by, the shadow of a cloud that floats in the air."

He was interrupted in these reflections by the arrival of a courier, with dispatches from one of his ministers. The moment he ran his eye over them, that gloom of lassitude and discontent which overcast his brow vanished, his eye flashed with resentment and martial ardour, and his whole frame seemed to be on fire. He gave orders for all his generals to attend him immediately, and then walking a turn or two about his tent, "No!" (said he) it is not come to that yet. Never will I submit to such ignominious terms while I have a subject able to draw a sword. Never will I tarnish the glory of so many victories by the least concession. Is my fate to depend on the caprice of women? Is my dominions to be parcelled out by dreaming statesmen? Sooner shall the ravages of war consume me all, than I will yield to such dishonour. I'll fight out to the last man, set fire to the last town with my own hand, and perish in the flames, before my soul will bend to their desires, or comply with such disgraceful conditions."

The entrance of his officers broke off his meditation. He paused a moment, to moderate the emotions.

of his soul, and then addressing himself to them, " My friends, (said he) our enemies insult us. They make proposals too haughty and severe to be received even from victors. But we will bring them to a more moderate way of thinking. I am resolved to make one effort, to put an end to this destructive war. We will this night attack the enemy in such a quarter. Our wary adversary will not run the hazard of succouring his colleague in the dark, for fear an attempt should be made upon his own camp in the mean while; so that, for this time, the advantage of numbers will not be against us. In other respects I know the difficulty of the undertaking; but difficulties never discourage a brave mind from great attempts. I am sick of the horrors of war, and will see no more of them. We will either conquer or die."

His generals heard these words with a melancholy fierce delight. They all wished to see an end put to the calamities which laid their country waste; if that could not be accomplished, death appeared a desirable release from the horrors with which they were surrounded. As soon as they left their sovereign's presence, therefore, they embraced each other, as men who expected not to meet again, and then went to prepare every thing for putting his commands in execution.

As for the monarch, the approach of such a scene seemed a relief to his mind, by diverting his attention from the reflections which tortured him before. Untangled in the tender connexions of nature, which, it were, multiply a man into many selves, for the sake of each dear particular of whom his anxiety is greater than for his own, he looked forward to the dreadful hour unmoved; and, despising any danger which threatened himself, was not disturbed with sympathetic apprehensions for others.

At length the moment, loaded with the fate of many thousands, arrived. The horrors of such a scene are beyond description; my soul still sickens at the thought. I have said that the attack was to be made in the night. Nature, as if to hide the madness of

My  
nake  
even  
mo-  
the one  
the will  
Our  
ouring  
ould be  
e; se  
rs wil  
e diffi-  
ver di-  
am sic  
f them  
ancholy  
d put  
; if the  
desirab-  
vere su-  
gn's pr-  
, as m-  
n went  
ds in ex-  
ch a sce-  
s attent-  
re. Un-  
which,  
r the saf-  
y is grea-  
readful h-  
n threate-  
e apprehe-  
e fate o-  
such a fi-  
ckens at  
o be mad-  
ness of m-  
k

ind, wrapped the guilty scene in tenfold darkness. This was favourable to the assailants. Inspired with the resolution of their sovereign, they knew that their road to victory was right forwards, and rushed on with an impetuosity impossible to be resisted; while their opponents, attacked on every side, knew not where to direct their force. But neither did they know whither to retreat. If distraction therefore made their efforts less equal, despair supported their resolution. They fought at random, and destroyed their friends as well as their enemies: but still they fought with valour, heightened by despair. At length their entrenchments were all forced, and they were driven, themselves scarce knew whither. The darkness, which before was against them, proved now their security. Pursuit was impossible. The advantage also had already cost the victors so dear, that they were cautious, as the least miscarriage might reverse the success.

The heart of man must be seared against every feeling of humanity, to support such a fight as the morning disclosed. The victorious monarch, animated with all his martial enthusiasm, was unable to bear it. He led his men, harassed as they were, in pursuit of the enemy, though he expected not to overtake them; but when it removed him from this horrid scene.

As soon as his spirit had cooled a little from the ardour, or rather madness, necessary to support them through their late exertion, he sought to relieve nature's heat. But the labours of his mind were far from being at an end. Sleep had no sooner overpowered his weak senses, than his imagination was at work, and placed him in the midst of the tumults and confusion from which he was but just delivered. He gave aloud the several words of command, and fought over again the whole battle of the night before, with as much eagerness and anxiety as if he was actually engaged, till at length the hurry of his spirits and agitation of his whole frame awoke him, little refreshed by such broken slumbers. Such a life could not afford pleasure in the contemplation. I was just turning from him, surfeited with *heroism* and *greatness*, when an affair that shewed

shewed his character in a new light, attracted my attention.

---

## C H A P. XXI.

*An approved medicine for a sick mind. A curious conversation between two great persons, with a compendious method of acquiring fame.*

WHEN he arose from his thorny pillow, he went to a trunk, and taking out a book, " Learning (said he, sighing) has been called the medicine of the mind. Let me try if I can find it so. No mind ever wanted a medicine to heal its sickness, more than mine does at this moment."—Then reading a page or two, " Aye, (continued he) these are fine schemes if they could but be brought to bear. Any of them would ensure the wished-for envied epithet of *great* without the fatigue of this horrid trade of war; though I much fear this too will disappoint me as that did, and that in the end I shall find I have consumed my life in building castles in the air."

He then paused a moment, in a discontented mood and, throwing by the book, took up a written paper on which he had scarce cast his eye when he seemed to have found the remedy he wanted. A smile of complacency softened his brow, his eyes sparkled with pleasure, and his heart throbbed with conscious pride as he read it over most emphatically to himself. " Why did I not fix my hopes of fame, my claim to immortality, on these? (said he, swelling into a tenfold consequence as he spoke) the muses would not have disdained my addresses; they would have crowned me with the glory which I sought for in vain in philosophy, and I pursue with no better prospect of success in war. But soft! Is not this the day on which the favourite of the muses, *Crambo*, promised to come and shew his last work? Who knows but I may effect the sum all my designs by his assistance? Every other busi-

just give place to this. I would not miss the pleasure of conversing with him, or run the hazard of any other's seeing his works before me, for many reasons." —  
Saying this, he called one of his attendants, and, giving some general directions to his officers, gave orders that no one should be admitted to him that morning but a particular person, whom he described. He had not waited long, when the expected visitor arrived, disguised in such a manner as must effectually conceal him. The monarch received him with the greatest familiarity, and pointing to a chair near himself, "Sit down, my friend, (said he) distinction is unnecessary among the muses sons. You wonder, I doubt not, at my desiring you to come in that disguise; but the reason was this: In my situation every motion is exposed to notice. When I have mind, therefore, to quit an hour from care, I am obliged to use some artifice of this kind, to conceal my design. I am now thought to be engaged on the most weighty affairs; and your dress, with the mysterious manner of your introduction, favours the deceit, and makes you pass for some secret emissary who has brought me intelligence. Were it known that I enjoy one hour of social converse, like another man, it would take off from my importance, and weaken that implicit respect which the nature of my affairs makes indispensable. This is a blessing of pre-eminence: painful pre-eminence, nay, even in woe.

But let us quit so disagreeable a subject. Have you brought me the piece you mentioned in your letter? I long to see it; and hope you have not taken the notice of it to any other person living. Alexander was not more jealous of his tutor's publishing his knowledge for the instruction of the world, than I am of your communicating your works, even by the bare mention of their names, before I have had the first perusal of them. Like him, I would engross the sole enjoyment."

Your majesty does me the highest honour by this courtesy; (answered the other) but I am afraid the object will be found unworthy. However, such as it is, let it at your feet."

— " But

—“ But has no living person seen nor even heard of it ? ”

—“ None, I can most truly assure your majesty, I obeyed your commands with the greatest care. Here it is. The subject, I own, is trifling; but I hope the execution will not displease you. It is a short confutation of all the prejudices which have so long enslaved the human mind, under the title of religion. I have proved, in an allegorical history, by familiar instances taken from real or at least possible life, which is the same thing, that chance governs the world, and every occurrence in it; and that to attribute them to another cause, such as infinite power, wisdom, goodness, and such like, is most absurd, as they are plainly contrary to the effects of such a cause; and to give a greater force to my reasoning. I have all along affected to treat these very notions, which I controvert, with the most solemn respect.”

“ Just as I have written with the greatest acerbity against maxims (interrupted the king) which I practice every hour of my life.” — — Then running his eyes hastily over the first page, which chance had offered to him, “ This is the thing (continued he, in rapture) which has been ever wanted to clear the eyes of man, and enlighten his mind with the radiance of real knowledge. The voice of reason here utters the sacred words of truth, adorned with all the beauties of imagination. How exactly have you hit upon my sentiments! how forcibly expressed them! My intentions must have long proved to all who are capable of lifting up the veil which necessity obliges man to wear, that this is my opinion. You must leave my manuscript with me, that I may peruse it at my leisure; and remember, I have your promise, that you will not mention a word of it to any mortal. I have reasons for this injunction, which may not be disagreeable to you ”

—“ Nothing that your majesty commands can be disagreeable to me; nor need you doubt my fidelity. Here is another little thing, a mock-heroic poem in which the folly of all the philosophy, and the

pretensions

pretensions to knowledge, which have imposed upon the world for so many generations, are properly displayed. It is something of the same nature with the other, the design of which it compleats, by shewing that there is nothing certain in this life; and, therefore, that true wisdom consists in doing that which is most agreeable to ourselves without regard to any contrary opinions, however hallowed to foolish veneration by the rust and cobwebs of antiquity."

— "My system still. Yes! let me have it. My head is stunned with the noise of war, and wants the harmony of your numbers to compose it. This is poetry. This is the genuine effusion of a mind inspired. Such writing despairs the critics rage, and even rises above the wreck of time. What elegance! What fire! How bold, and yet how clear!"

— "Your majesty's approbation is the highest object of my ambition. It is fame. Though till that sanction is made public, I doubt not but I shall have an outcry raised against me, particularly on account of the first work, for bringing ridicule to aid my argument, against opinions so long consecrated, by ignorance to blind respect. But it was impossible to restrain the fallies of wit on subjects which lay so open to lash."

— "Most certainly; nor are they in the least reprehensible. A poignant jest often ihames a man of an opinion which no argument could make him give up. You tell me with the assurance of tried truth, that no man living knows any thing either of these works. In return for your coming with my desire in that, I will now intrust you with the darling secret of my soul. No man must ever know any thing of them; I mean, as your's. Shall I tell you all? You are sensible of the ardour with which I pant for fame. Though chance has thrown me into the more turbulent scenes of life, my heart languishes for the happiness of retirement, for the glory it is acquired by the calmer works of learned ease: were my first essays to obtain it so unsuccessful as to courage the pursuit, did the indispensable duties of station permit it.

" Can

“ Can you then, my friend, indulge this ruling passion of my soul so far, as to give up these children of your brain to my adoption, and let me produce them to the world as my own, without danger of paternal fondness’s breaking out, and claiming them? I know it is a delicate and difficult request; but I will amply recompense your compliance and then you will soon be able to produce more. The spring from whence these flowed is not exhausted.”

“ Beside, I claim a kind of right to them. They are the very sentiments of my soul, which I designed to have published as soon as I could spare time to dispose them into proper order. In this you have prevented me; may I not say rather, saved me the trouble, and now present my own anticipated of spring to me, with the advantage of being educated by your hand. The matter is literally mine, as much as it is your’s; the form, indeed, is all your own. What do you say? Are you willing to gratify my desire?”

—“ Every command of your majesty’s is entitled to immediate obedience; I most willingly consign them into your hands, to dispose of as you please, either to publish or absolutely suppress them for ever. Could I have thought of their having such a glorious fate? I should have laboured to make them more worth of it.”

—“ They are very well. It is the subject that particularly strikes me. If I find any thing amiss in the manner of treating it, I will myself correct it. Here! take this order to my treasurer. You see it is expressly said to be for *secret* service.

“ Your majesty’s munificence (answered the lucid author, who was so astonished at the greatness of the sum, that it was some time before he had power to speak) overwhelms me with confusion. This is too much; too much for me to take!”

—“ But not for me to give (replied the monarch, smiling). Let me see you again before you go away. I must now give some orders, which

his moment come into my head ; but I shall be at leisure by the time you return from the treasurer."

The author bowed with the most profound respect, and departed in evident happiness of heart.

When he was gone, the king, looking at his new purchase with the highest delight ; At length (said he) have accomplished my design. These will extend my name through the whole circle of the human powers. Shine already as a legislator and historian ; these add the characters of a poet, and a divine. Singularity is the first step to eminence. A *great* man should do nothing in the common way. Now that I have unhinged the religion of the world, as soon as I am at leisure I will devise a new one of my own, and erect it on the ruins of the old. This is all I want to confirm my being the *greatest* man of this, or any other age."

When he had pleased himself with these reflections for some time, he resumed his wonted thoughtful look, and went to meet his ministers, who, struck with his appearance, listened to his words with a kind of religious veneration, prepared to obey whatever he should command, without presuming to discuss it even in their own minds, as if he had been a being of a superior nature.

Having dispatched these affairs, he retired to meet the happy author, who had received the money, and was returned according to his orders. " Well, (said the king) I hope you don't regret the change you have made. I have nothing more to say to you at this time, but to desire that I may hear constantly from you. Much as I am involved in other affairs, I shall always find some time to correspond with you ; and observe, that I insist on your laying aside all formality, and writing your thoughts as freely as they rise in your mind ; and all lovers of philosophic truth do."

" Your majesty (answered the other) heaps new honours on me, by every new command. I will obey you with the utmost punctuality, and think myself happy if my poor work can merit the approbation of so consummate a judge." — The scene now grew so fulsome, each

each flattering the other in the grossest manner, that I was glad when it was ended.

This contemptible instance of vanity sullied the lustre of the monarch's other qualities, and made me so sick of ambition in every shape, that I could bear the sight of him no longer. I therefore took my leave of heroism and greatness, of which my heart was sick, and departed along with the author, in whom I saw something that raised my curiosity to be better acquainted with him.

---

### C H A P. XIII.

*A remarkable instance of poetic gratitude and justice with some anecdotes of a celebrated genius.*

**T**H E moment he left the monarch's presence, he made all possible haste to get out of his reach also, for fear of his changing his mind, and resuming his most profuse present. When his heart was freed from this fear, on his entering the territories of a neutral power, he stopped, to recover his fatigue, and consider how he should dispose of his new fortune in the most proper manner. After a variety of schemes, he at last resolved to fix his abode in the territories of a certain free but poor state, where he should be at liberty to pursue his own inclinations without interruption, and gain respect by the magnificence which he was now able to display.

This first point being settled, his thoughts naturally recurred to the means by which he had acquired his fortune. Amply as the monarch had paid him for the honour of fathering his works, his vanity took the alarm at the same he should lose, and envy determined him to break faith with his benefactor, and betray his weakness, by publishing the works in his own name as soon as ever the king should declare them to be his; for he would not do it sooner to prevent him that the detection might heighten the disgrace; the thoughts of his being under obligation, to which he meant to make so base a return, inflaming his head with

th the most malignant hatred. " I will expose him to the contempt of mankind, (said he) for his meanness and vanity. He never shall have the honour of my works. When he has plumed himself in the merit of them for a while, I'll strip the gaudy daw of his golden feathers and point him out to universal ridicule. I'll make alterations too ! and correct my errors ! Let him, let him expose himself ! The coarse patches will betray the bungling hand that puts them on, and serve for a convenient foil to the rest. If he desires me, let him earn it, and not strive thus to steal it from another. He never shall have the honour of my works. Had he not been a fool, he might have foreseen this, and in the plenitude of his tyranny have put me out of my power to defeat his design, by taking away my life ; but I am now beyond his reach, and will take care to keep myself so." — Then melting into rapture, at the thought of his wealth, " I will (continued he) like a prince among those republics, whose parsimony will be a foil to my munificence. Every thing about me, every thing I do, shall have an air of grandeur ; I'll build a theatre at my own house, where I will have my works represented according to my own taste, to my chosen friends."

The deliberate baseness of this resolution, so contradictory to the proper use of the powers which produced the occasion of it, tempted me to look back on the principal occurrences in the life of so extraordinary a person. He was born in a neighbouring country, where genius is encouraged by approbation, and starves in the midst of flattery. Abilities, such as his, soon extinguished themselves. He became the favourite of the publick, and heard nothing but his own praises. His reign was not long. He thought with a freedom and spirit which gave jealousy to a government established on the principles of despotism, and was obliged to leave his native land, to avoid falling a sacrifice to his

country in which he took refuge was in every respect the reverse of that he left. Approbation was given

given sparingly, and never soon ; but the more substantial reward of present profit seldom disappointed me and rational liberty gave genius its full scope. He first tasted the sweets of independency, and formed schemes for establishing himself in the possession of inestimable blessing. But his eagerness disappointed him by betraying him into some actions which obliged him to quit that country as precipitately as he had his o to avoid a more ignominious fate.

After some time spent in discontented rambling, prince, whom his fame had reached, not only gave an asylum in his dominions, but also heaped his fav on him so lavishly, that he resumed his hopes of independency, which this last affair enabled him to accomplish in a manner he had never even raised wishes. The return he meditated, and did afterwards p make (for when he considered more cooly, he d that part of his scheme of letting the king put them first, for fear his credit should overbalance own, and make himself appear the plagiary, and th fore printed them directly in his own name ; a p which the discontented monarch did not dare to peach, and could not punish) was agreeable to the tural tendency of his disposition, and of a piece with his behaviour to the people whose beneficence had forded him relief, and first raised his hopes, who calumniated with the most malignant virulence, as as he was out of the reach of their offended laws.

The abilities which enabled him to triumph over many difficulties as his folly drew him into, were tainly very great, though vanity much lessened merit. An affectation of singularity, of shewing self wiser than all the rest of the world, making dispute the truth of, and treat with contempt principles which had ever been held in the highest peet, and established as the rules of moral action, foundations of religious faith.

Impious and absurd as such vanity was, it found plause and imitation from the kindred vanity of greater part of mankind ; and the interest they in supplanting an authority that contradicted their

sub-  
e, and made it criminal in the eyes of others, and  
dangerous in their own.

To this cause chiefly he was indebted for the rapi-  
ty of his rise to fame ; for literary merit, however  
great, is obliged to stand the test of time before it meets  
general approbation, where some lucky circumstance  
does not concur thus to favour it.

Shocked at such a prostitution, I left him to pursue  
my own machinations ; and, having abundantly satis-  
fied my curiosity with military matters, resolved to  
change the scene of my observations, and go to the  
parts of the powers engaged in war, in hopes that,  
by the credit of human nature, I might find the mea-  
sures of their civil government deduced from more ra-  
tional principals than those which appeared to influence  
the conduct of their armies.



THE  
**R E V E R I E**  
OR, A

Flight to the Paradise of Fools

BOOK II.

CHAP. I.

*A council scene. The mildness of female government with a remarkable instance of the happy effect of proof upon great minds.*

THE first court which I thought proper to take a view of was that of the power most immediately engaged in the war against the prince whose cause I had just left. Accordingly I wished myself thither directly, to avoid the pain of travelling through scenes of desolation and misery exhibited by all the countries around.

On my arrival I found the sovereign seated in council in the midst of his ministers. There appeared in his looks a phlegm, which in different countries is taken to denote the different qualities of wisdom and stupidity, and which here seemed to have extended its soporiferous influence over all present, who sat with their eyes fixed upon the table, as if waiting in suspension of thought for something to set their faculties at work.

They had continued in this state for some time, when a female entered and placed herself at the right hand of the sovereign. Her features were strong and masculine; was dressed in the robes of independent royalty, the haughtiness of her looks and deportment shew- that she esteemed herself superior to all the princes of the world.

The moment she entered, the whole council assumed a new appearance. The sovereign looked abashed, and ministers, rouzed from their former serenity, waited her words with fear and trembling. “ I ordered your attendance, (said she, looking fiercely round, the fire of her soul flashing from her eyes as she spoke) to you know what I will have done in the present conjecture. I will no longer bear to be braved thus by vassals, who, by the weakness of some of my predecessors, have acquired this unnatural power of rebelling against their sovereign. They shall be declared public enemies to the general state, and the rest of the feudates obliged to join their forces, according to the ordinances of those who gave them the power they now feel, to reduce them to their proper state of obedience. When these have done that, the troops of my own dominions shall humble them also. I will no longer be imposed by such ungrateful slaves; for such they were, such they shall be again. And you, sir, (addressing himself to the sovereign) must enforce this sentence with your authority. The rank to which you have been raised by your alliance with me, enables you to do anything, if you had but proper spirit.

Madam, (answered the sovereign) I — I — I can do nothing. You have taken all the power into your own hands, and left nothing for me to do.”

Yes, (replied she) with a look of the highest contempt you can drink away your senses; and that is all I mind. Had I been blessed with an husband of spirit equal to my own, we should have subdued the world. Mankind would have been my slaves. But now my work is all my own; you only contribute an empty name.” — Then turning to her secretary, “ Let this decree be notified to all the other vassals without loss of time, that they may prepare to obey it.”

" May it please your most august majesty, (said the secretary, making an obeisance as low as adoration) this sentence intended only against the principal power with whom you are at war? Or are all his friends those I mean who have not directly declared against you to be included?"

" All, all; (answered she) their presumption is equal, and so shall be their punishment. Those who even hesitate to obey my commands I hold to be enemies, and will treat them as such."

" Your most sacred majesty's commands (replied the secretary) should be a law to all the world. Here is a memorial which I have this day received from the minister of his principal ally. It relates immediately to the purpose of this your majesty's most magnanimous and just resolution, their conscious dread of which anticipates your tremendous declaration."

" Let it be read; (said she impatiently) I will hear what it contains, though all the world shall not make me alter my resolution."

" Far be it from your servant to suppose any thing; (answered the secretary) the will of so mighty a princess should be as immutable as fate. Shall I read the whole, or only give a summary of the contents? It is very long: and not always conceived with the respect due to your sublimity, from the other sovereigns of the earth."

" The substance of it (replied she haughtily) will be as much as I shall hear, and more than I shall pay regard to."

" Hem! ahem! In the first place, (said he, clearing his voice, and casting his eye upon the paper in his hand) the memorialist presumes to throw the blame of the present war entirely upon your majesty; accusing you of a design to overturn the just rights and liberties of those whom he calls the sovereign princes independent members of the state; and in consequence of this accusation, justifies the opposition made by your enemy, and the assistance contributed by others to support of a cause common to them all. He presumes likewise to deny and protest against your irreducible majesty's undoubted right of employing the autho-

his most serene majesty, your royal consort, in a dis-  
tance which interferes not with his state, but belongs  
entirely to your own hereditary dominions, audaciously  
and directly insisting, that instead of aiding your ma-  
jesty's designs, he ought to oppose his whole force to  
beat them, agreeably to the true intent of the high  
trust reposed in him when he was raised to his present  
exalted station. In quality then of sovereign of other  
monarchs, he takes the liberty to upbraid your incom-  
parable majesty with ingratitude, asserting, that, without  
mentioning the many obligations conferred upon  
our royal ancestors, your majesty has yourself been  
supported on your throne by his assistance, against the  
plots of those very enemies of your august house,  
whom you have now most unnaturally joined with a-  
gainst him, your only firm and effectual ally; and, last-  
ly, he has the assurance to declare, that he will now  
employ the same power in defence of what he calls his  
own rights, and those of his allies; with which he most  
solently adds, that he fears not to humble that in-  
grateful — ”

While the secretary was making this recital, every  
feature of his mistress's face was distorted with the dif-  
ferent passions of pride, rage, and revenge; but these  
last words hurried her beyond all patience. “ Villain ! ”  
said she, (snatching the memorial from his trembling  
hand, and throwing it in his face) how darest thou re-  
peat such insolence before me ? Obligations to him !  
not only did his duty ; and was overpaid by my accept-  
ance of it. My house, the first on earth, has a right  
to every thing in the power of inferior princes, to con-  
tribute to its exaltation ; nor shall any petty, limited  
sovereign, presume to call my commands in question,  
or censure my making alliances with whom I please.  
Whatever I will is right ; and this I will support against  
their opposition, while I have a subject able to draw  
a sword.”

The vehemence with which she spoke these words  
woke her royal consort, who was so affected by the  
duke she had given him just before, that he fell asleep.  
Starting therefore, Hah ! What ! What opposition ?

(said he, staring about, and repeating her last words)  
What opposition?"

"Peace, idiot! fool! (answered his gentle mate) only opposition I regard, is that of your indolence and stupidity." — Then, turning again to the secretary, "Draw up the decree (continued she) directly, enforce it with every expression of contempt for the writer of this insolent memorial. I'll shew him what regard I pay to his upbraiding; and that I hold services he values himself so highly upon, to be all cancelled from the moment he dared to disobey my sovereign will in any instance." —

Saying this, she arose; and, dismissing the council with a motion of her hand, retired; her royal countenance not venturing to speak a word.

---

## CHAP. II.

*A ready salve for a sore conscience, with a proper reward for piety. An unexpected disappointment shewing the greatness of soul in a striking light. A day concluded consistently.*

FROM council her majesty went into her own apartment, where she met her confessor, who was waiting for her. "I sent for you, father, (said she) to unburthen my conscience, which cannot bear the weight of any thing that even looks like a crime. I even of this war not immediately answering my expectations, I have consented to a proposal made to me, having my enemy taken off by poison: I have also given orders to one of my generals, to march into the territories of those states who refused to join with me in the war, and to burn and destroy all before him, putting man, woman, and child, to the sword, to revenge the disrespectful manner in which they refused to comply with my demands, and strike a terror into others for the future. Now, as I conclude that both these orders have been put in execution this morning, I sent for you to receive absolution."

"

" The piety of your most sacred majesty (answered he ecclesiastic) is highly commendable, and deserves the indulgence of the holy church in the most unlimited degree. Such things, to be sure, are in general criminal; but particular circumstances may change their nature. The urgency of your majesty's affairs requires dispatch, and your honour must be vindicated. These considerations are in themselves of weight to authorize what else ought to be avoided. But there is another reason still stronger, and which makes the actions that hurt the tenderness of your conscience meritorious, instead of reprehensible. Your enemy is an heretic, and therefore out of the protection of all laws human and divine; and those who refused to assist you against him, though not formally heretics themselves as yet, discover by that refusal a kind of tendency that way, and should be prevented by wholesome chastisement; the first duty of all true sons of the church being to extirpate heresy."

Having quieted her majesty's conscience by this pious distinction, he proceeded to the ceremony of giving her absolution, which he performed with a solemnity and parade equally impious and ridiculous on such an occasion.

When this important affair was finished, addressing his penitent with a look of joy, " I have the happiness (said he) to congratulate your majesty on the highest honour which can be obtained in this world. Our most holy father, in token of his approbation of your zeal for the glory of the church, has thought proper to grant you an addition to your titles, which gives you the pre-eminence over all the potentates on earth; and has blessed me with the office of imposing it in his name, whenever your majesty pleases to appoint a time for the glorious ceremonies which his wisdom has instituted for that purpose."

" I have a just sense of his holiness's favour, (answered she) and shall be glad to receive it in the proper manner as soon as possible, as my whole soul is implicitly devoted to the ceremonies of our divine religion."

“ To-morrow then (said he) will I perform the sacred office of this second baptism, and give you a token that shall be expressive of the regard you so nobly shew at this time for the advancement of the faith; for which purpose I will go directly and give orders for adorning the great church with all the precious and costly images and relics of the saints and angels, who will look down with pleasure to behold your majesty raised to a degree of honour superior even to their own. You will please to command all the great officers of your court to attend, that nothing may be wanting to make the ceremony truly grand.”

While her majesty was preparing for this great affair, my curiosity prompted me to see how her royal consort disposed of his time. As soon as the council was broken up, in which he made the important figure that had been related, he hastened to his own particular apartments, where, throwing off the mockery of royalty with which he was encumbered, he sat down with some of his most intimate favourites, to drown the cares of state in wine.

The conversation was suited to the occasion. “ For my part (said the sovereign, filling his bumper) I can not conceive what pleasure those people find in politics and wars, and such like turbulent perplexing matters. I never think of the former, that they do not make me head ake; though the truth is, her majesty, for the most part, saves me that trouble. And then, for fighting! I bless my stars I am no hero; nor, while I have a bottle of such wine as this before me, envy any of them their laurels.”

“ It would be happy for the world, (said one of the company, while the sovereign quaffed off his bumper) if all princes were of your majesty’s way of thinking. The pleasures of life might then be enjoyed in peace and satisfaction.” — This turned the discourse naturally on those pleasures, which they all talked over with the greatest keenness, till it was time to go to the opera, where his majesty seldom failed to spend the evening.

His royal consort, elated at the thought of the mighty things which had been done for her that morn-

the same day, and of the sacred honour she was to receive next day, went thither also, to indulge the happiness of her heart; but happening in the course of the entertainment to observe that her husband looked with more than common earnestness at one of the female performers, she gave orders to one of her officers to remove her that very night out of her dominions, without permitting her husband to see her, not bearing that any other should interfere with her in the only advantage she reaped from her marriage.

The ceremony of the next day exceeded all description. Every instance of pomp, both secular and religious, which superstition and vanity could suggest, was displayed to make the farce complete, without any regard to the danger of offending the Deity by such an hypocritical prostitution of rites appropriated to his service, and many of them appointed by himself.

But the joy of her most pious majesty was soon damped. She had flattered herself, that the scheme for poisoning her enemy was laid so well, and committed into such trusty hands as to be safe from disappointment or detection. On this her confessor built strongly, that he resolved to promise some signal and speedy instance of success, as a divine ratification of her new title. Accordingly, in the oration with which he concluded the ceremony, he worked himself up into the appearance of prophetic enthusiasm, and ventured even to point out the death of her enemy, as if by immediate inspiration, describing his agonies in a rhetorical flourish, and attributing his fate to the hand of Heaven, as a punishment for his rebellion against his sovereign.

The effect which this had upon the multitude is not to be expressed. Prepared by their natural superstition to believe every thing their priests pleased to tell them, they looked for the instant accomplishment of this prediction with such strong faith, that, had the expected news arrived at that time, they would have received it implicitly as a miracle; and most probably had fallen down and worshipped their sovereign, in

whose favour it would have appeared to have been wrought.

But unluckily for the poor prophet, just as he had finished his declamation, an account was received that the attempt upon the king's life had miscarried, and her most pious majesty's privity to it been detected in the plainest manner, so as to reflect an indelible disgrace upon her in the eyes of the world; and that her army, which was to have ravaged the territories of her friends, had been repulsed with great loss, and by a body of such inferior force as to look like the immediate interposition of Providence. The consequence of this may be easily conceived. The preacher was ashamed to shew his face: The glorious title was turned into ridicule; and her majesty was overwhelmed with vexation at her disappointment.

As soon as she had recovered herself a little, she summoned her council again on this important occasion. After long deliberation, it was at last concluded to give up a considerable part of the territories of some of her most faithful friends, to one of the powers confederate with her in the war, to induce it to exert all its force to oppress an enemy from whom they met such unexpected resistance; for, so strong was the hatred of her soul against him, that she would ruin herself rather than should escape ruin. As to the charge of being concealed in the infamous and horrid scheme of poisoning him, she affected to treat it with contempt as a groundless slander, to which she disdained to make any answer.

But the fanguine hopes she built upon this absurd expedient, which brought into her neighbourhood a man infinitely more dangerous than the one whom she wanted to destroy, were soon overthrown. Her express messengers were scarce dispatched, when she received an account of the death of her ally, upon whose assistance she had depended; and from whose successor she had just reason to apprehend even worse than the disappointment of her hopes, as his avowed attachment to her enemy had engaged her in intrigues against his life also, which he had discovered, and would now most probably revenge by turning his forces against her.

This event disconcerted all her schemes, and shewed her that the ruin of her enemy, which she had pursued with such inveteracy, and flattered herself with the thought of being so near, was now removed farther off than ever, if not absolutely out of her power to accomplish. However the blind implacability of her soul was not to be convinced. She resolved to double all her efforts; she ordered every subject in her dominions to take arms; and lastly proposed to the professed enemies of her faith, to share with her the conquest which they should assist her to make in a war, alledged to have been undertaken on a religious motive, sacrificing every obligation, human and divine, to an impotent desire of revenge; and thus concluded a day hallowed in the annals of her reign, by the reception of her sacred title.

Such scenes were too shocking to be dwelt on. I resolved to leave that court directly: and took the opportunity of travelling with a courier whom her sacred master sent to one of her allies, that I might take a view of that part of his dominions in which he resided at that time, and learn something of the manners of the people with whom I was yet unacquainted.

---

### C H A P. III.

*the happy effects of greatness; with a new way of punishing disobedience, and making the most of power.*

THE courier had scarce entered the territories of the prince to whom he was sent, when he was seized by a band of free-booters, who, without any regard to his character, dragged him away to their chief. It was late when he fell into their hands; and as they had prowled to a considerable distance from home, they intended to stop at their own place of habitation till morning.

Nothing could equal the brutal behaviour of these ruffians, but their worse than brutal insolence, and the misery in which they lived. They threw their captive into the corner of a hovel, in which the leader of the gang dwelt, among their swine and cows; the best

place

place in the hut, if any could be called by that title being reserved for their horses, who fared in every respect better than their masters ; and then, devouring messes of food which any human creatures, not immediately impelled by famine, would have turned from with loathing, lay down to sleep upon an heap of straw, all mixed together, without any regard to decency or difference of sex, where they snored till next morning when they arose as soon as it was light, and licking up what their dogs had left of their over-night's fare, hurried their captive away to their lord.

When they arrived at his castle they met him going his stables, and, falling on their knees in the wet and mire with which the whole place was plentifully covered, informed him of their success. The courier without waiting for his lordship's making them any reply, addressed him boldly, and, telling what he was complained heavily of the outrage he had suffered, and demanded to be set immediately at liberty, to pursue his journey, as he was charged with dispatches of the utmost importance to his sovereign. The air of freedom with which he spoke offended the pride of the mighty lord ; but his dignity was struck at by this word in a manner that he did not think proper to bear for he would not have his vassals even suspect that he paid obedience to any power upon earth. " Take hence that slave, (said he, without deigning to look him) and throw him into the dungeon. I'll chastise him for his insolence. My sovereign ! A nobleman owes no sovereign." Then turning to his people, who continued kneeling, " What more have you brought me ? (said he) I sent you word that I was going to attend the great convention of the states, and wanted money."

To this terrible speech the principal of the gang answered, that they had no money themselves, nor were able to get any, though they had scoured the whole country in search of it. " Villains ! dogs ! (exclaimed his lord, flying at the poor trembling wretch, and beating him unmercifully with his horse-whip) Tell not that you have no money. You must find it for

I'll sell yourselves, your wives and children, for  
aves. Be gone; and either bring me money to mor-  
row morning, or every female in your families. I'll  
ake you know that I will be obeyed."

The wretches went away without daring to expos-  
ate, while their potent lord strutted off, swollen with  
the thought of having so many of his fellow creatures  
subject to his pleasure.

As soon as he entered his castle, he ordered the cou-  
rier to be brought before him again; and having reprim-  
anded him severely for behaving with such insolence  
a person of his importance, dismissed him, now that  
is own vassals, into whom he meant to strike a terror,  
ere departed. Every thing about him was in charac-  
ter. His castle, which his own people thought one  
of the grandest palaces in the world, was a mean, in-  
modious, but indifferently strong place; the furni-  
ture, some of it rich, but old, awkward, and ill suited,  
and most of the lesser conveniences of life utterly  
wanting; and here was this petty tyrant served with a  
bride and ostentation, which were a severe though  
st ridicule upon the pomp and vanity of state.

There was something so new to me in this scene,  
that I resolved to pursue it farther. I therefore quitted  
the courier for the company of this *nobleman*, with  
whom I saw, I should have an opportunity of travel-  
ing to the court, when he should go to the convention  
of the states, in equipping his horses, for which grand  
occasion he spent the rest of the day; for on them was  
all his pride displayed.

The next morning produced a scene that was a dis-  
grace to the human name. His wretched vassals, in  
obedience to his dread commands, came with all their  
others, sisters, wifes, and daughters, for he had  
made no exception of age or infirmity, driven before  
them like a herd of cattle to the market. They also  
brought all their worldly substance, consisting of the  
wretched utensils of their houses, their implements of  
husbandry, and their cattle, to give in the place of their  
wives, if their lord would be graciously pleased to ac-  
cept of the exchange, and let them starve together.

The

The cries of the females, and the distress painted on the faces of the men, (for they did not dare to complain) are not to be expressed; but neither made any impression on their lord, whose noble heart was above the vulgar weaknesses of humanity. "So! (said he sternly) then you have dared to disobey my commands, and you brought me the money?"

"Mighty lord! (answered an ecclesiastic, who had ventured to come as their intercessor) they have obeyed your commands as far as was in their power, and brought all their women; but money it was impossible for them to bring. The armies, which have marched so often through the country of late, have plundered them of every thing which they might sell to raise money for your use; nor do travellers venture to carry a thing valuable with them in such dangerous times; that they cannot obtain any that way neither. Have compassion therefore on their distress, and tear from them their families, the only comfort which they enjoy in life. They have brought all their poor substance." —

While the priest was making this pathetic address, the lord was viewing his property, and bargaining for the slaves with some Jewish slave-merchants, whom he had summoned on the occasion, and who are always ready to purchase such unhappy creatures, to sell again to the Turks. "It is in vain for you to speak (said he, when he had concluded his bargain) whatever I command shall be done; and since they have neglected to provide money, their women shall go. This will teach them to be more diligent another time. They mind nothing now but dallying with their wives; but they'll do better when they are gone." — Saying this, he made a final清算 to the Jews, who drew out the number they had bought, and, paying down their price, drove them away, without the least regard to their cries and distress at this violation of all the tenderest ties of nature.

The horror I felt at this abominable tyranny is not to be expressed; nor the gratitude with which I offered up my thanks to Heaven, for the inestimable happiness of living in a country where I was secure from such outrages against the common rights of mankind. "To

happ

happy Britons! (said I to myself, in the overflowing of my heart) did you but know your own happiness; you live under the protection of laws enacted by yourselves; under the government of a prince who asserts his power only in acts of benevolence and virtue!"

## C H A P. IV.

*Account of an uncommon kind of council; with its natural conclusion.*

WHEN this important affair was finished, the nobleman set out for the convention of the states, with a numerous and grand retinue. The country through which he travelled bore every-where the same appearance with his own territories; the vassals in the most abject slavery and wretchedness, and their tyrants in slovenly profusion, and awkward splendor.

The convention to which the *nobles* were all at this time going, was one of the most glaring instances of man absurdity. It was held in a large plain, where these petty tyrants met on horse-back, armed, and the head of their vassals, under the specious pretext of deliberating on the public welfare; but how likely they were to promote it is sufficiently obvious: for if the voice of reason is seldom heard with respect in the most regulated assemblies, and among the most civilized people, where every precaution which human prudence can suggest is taken, to prevent the animosity inseparable from difference of sentiment, from breaking out into acts of violence, what must be expected from a number of men like these, bred up in lawless insolence and outrage, and gathering together without a rule to direct, or power to controul them, prepared to support their own opinions by force when arguments should fail, let them be never so extravagant and unjust; that, I say, must be expected from such a meeting of tumult, confusion, and slaughter?

This consequence was so well known to their sovereigns, that although they could not abrogate a custom hallowed

hallowed by its antiquity, whose sanction too often makes absurdity venerable, and which owed its rise to the most barbarous ignorance, they never would consent to so dangerous and ineffectual an expedient, except in times of public calamity, when their licentious subjects extorted such a concession from them; for the right of convening them was entirely in the sovereign, from whom the supreme power in its utmost latitude was transferred to the collective body of the nobles the moment they met, and for the time of their continuing together; which, however, was always limited to one day, to obviate their abusing their trust.

They assembled accordingly at sun-rise, and separating from their attendants, who stood around them a some little distance, waited for the arrival of their sovereign, to explain to them in form the cause of his summoning them to meet. The time of their waiting was spent in forming cabals, fomenting their mutual discontents, and stimulating each other to sedition, by aggravating every exertion of the royal authority into a breach of their privileges, and an encroachment on the liberty of the public; in behalf of which they declared with as much vehemence as if they were resolved to banish tyranny from the face of the earth and restore all mankind to their original equality.

At length the sovereign appeared with a magnificence almost exceeding imagination; but his looks shewed that grandeur often gilds unhappiness. Advancing into the midst of the assembly, he opened the convention with a most affecting speech, in which he set forth the public distresses in the most lively and pathetic colours, and desired their assistance to remedy them, with a much condescension as was consistent with the dignity of his rank.

But it was far from their intention to comply with any thing he should require: they scarce gave him liberty to finish his speech, when, throwing off all respect and restraint, an hundred mouths opened upon him at once, accusing him of being the cause of all the public calamities, by the weak and pernicious measures of his government; and upbraiding him with tyranny.

and a design of overturning the liberties of his subjects' which he had sworn to maintain.

The sovereign, unable to prevent, and unwilling to hear such indignities, thought proper to retire, and leave them, to pursue their deliberations among themselves, from which he had never expected any advantage, though their clamours had obliged him to call them together. The event was what reason must easily foresee. All was tumult, riot, and confusion. Every one spoke at once; and though in the main they all intended the same thing, which was to dethrone their sovereign, that they might act the ravages with impunity till another could be elected; their ungoverned heat and impatience defeated their design, and made them fall into the snares of some who were his friends, who designedly raised a quarrel in which all took part; and in their madness fell to fighting, they knew not what, nor cared with whom, without a possibility of their being calmed to conclude upon any thing. Their attendants, whom they brought to awe their sovereign, thinking it their duty to assist their lords, joined in the fray, which soon became more horrible than any pitched battle, every one murdering his neighbour without distinction of friend or foe. Night at length separated the survivors, who, without ever enquiring what had been the cause of the quarrel, returned to their respective homes, enflamed with the most virulent animosity against each other, which they wreaked with fury that aggravated the public calamities a thousand-

The consequence of this constant end of those meetings, and which only could induce the sovereign to submit to the hard expedient of permitting them, was, that it generally delivered him from a great part of his enemies, and diverting the rage of the rest from him for a time, left him at liberty to pursue his own measures, with whatever friends he had been able to attach to him; for all their power ended with the day, having no right to meet again without a new summons, which such an event gave him just reason to require it.

From

From this horrid scene I went to court, with one those who had first began the quarrel; and having slipped out of the danger, as soon as he had set them together by the ears, hastened, as soon as all was over, to give an account of the event to the minister. The pleasure with which the latter received the shocking detail was painful to humanity to behold. He made it repeated to him over and over, that he might not lose minutest circumstance, and then went with the pleasant news to his master.

The moment he came into his presence, "I congratulate your majesty (said he, with an air of exultation) on the event of the convention. It has concluded properly in a general broil, in which the greatest part of your enemies have met the fate they deserved."

High as the triumph of the minister was, he could not communicate his joy to his master. "It is a laudable case, answered the king, (with a deep sigh) that a sovereign, who ought to be the father of his people, and study only their happiness, should have reason to hear such an horrid account with pleasure."

"I have often told your majesty (replied the minister) that this injudicious tenderness was the ruin of your affairs. Had you let your enemy be taken off in the manner I proposed before the war broke out, you would have avoided all the misfortunes which you have experienced since. There is no being any thing so halves. A great man is above the restraints which the prejudices of weaker people."

"Would to Heaven (returned the king) that I never aspired to that wretched character. All the happiness of life was in my possession, and I was blest with a taste to enjoy it; but I unhappily mistook the part nature had designed me, and aspiring at what I could not be, fell from that which I was."

"Why will your majesty (interrupted the minister with an accent of the most engaging tenderness and mischievous expostulation) torture yourself with these reflections? Every thing you have done was with the best and greatest designs: and if fortune has frowned upon your attempts, the fault lies not in you, nor should you be discouraged by the disappointments."

Perseverance

perseverence conquers the greatest difficulties; and one lucky event may yet put you in possession of all your hopes. At any rate, it is beneath you to retreat now. I would argue a dejection more disgraceful than a thousand defeats. Resume your spirits, therefore, and hope for the best. You have many resources yet, before it can be necessary for you to submit to the dishonour of receiving peace from your insulting foe; a foe whose affairs have been often in a much more desperate situation than yours, till his resolution retrieved them."

"My dear baron! (answered the king, somewhat encouraged by this speech) I leave every thing to you. I know your attachment to my interest; I know your abilities, and confide in them. Do what you think best; and may Heaven grant you success."

---

## CHAP. V.

*Mystery of favouritism. A remarkable instance of the art of making the most of a misfortune.*

HERE was something in the absolute ascendancy which this minister evidently possessed over his sovereign, so contradictory to the natural reason, and irritated sensibility, which marked the looks of the latter, that my curiosity led me to take a view of both their characters, that I might see by what means it had been obtained.

This prince was descending fast into the vale of years. He looked dejected, and melancholy had thrown over his whole appearance a veil of listlessness and diffidence, whose gloom obscured the lustre of his virtues.

Born to the sovereignty of dominions on which nature had bestowed her blessings with a bounteous hand, the cares of his life had been exerted to improve them by every assistance of industry and art. The success attended his most sanguine hopes; encouraged by his genius raised its head in his court, and every fine flourished in the sunshine of his favour.

So fair a morning promised the brightest day; but ambition soon overcast its radiance, and he forfeited those

those solid advantages, to grasp at this crown, more dazzling than his own to a superficial view, but far less rich in every real good, without being warned by the fate of his father, who had ship-wrecked his happiness on the same rock.

Adorned with every virtue that dignifies humanity, he seemed designed by Heaven to make his people happy; but the excess even of these virtues produced the contrary effect. He had contracted an intimacy in his earliest youth, when the tender mind receives the strongest impressions, with his present minister, who was placed in an honourable employment about his person by the king his father.

The superiority which a few years advance gives the beginning of life, generally imprints a respect difficult to be got over ever after. This person was blessed with every qualification which nature could bestow, to improve the advantages of his situation; nor wanted address and care to exert them in their utmost force. He soon attached the infant fondness of his young master by every pleasing art, and, as his reason began to expand itself, attracted the respect of that also, by displaying his own superiority in the most striking though delicate light.

The talents and disposition of the prince were such, as, in the general sense of the world, denominated him *more good than great*; whereas those of his favourite, the contrary, were all of the other kind, and calculated to make a noise and figure in the highest scenes of life.

In a good mind friendship often arises from the same cause which would have produced envy in one of a different cast. The prince admired the qualities which he was conscious he wanted himself; and as they were never ostentatiously shewn in opposition to him, soon received the strongest esteem for their owner, and resolved to reap the benefit of them by attaching him to his interest. The other, who soon saw the success of his hopes, omitted nothing that could possibly improve the influence he had acquired. He studied every part of his master's temper, and read his inclinations as soon as they arose; so that he was able to anticipate his master's wishes.

But the principal thing that established his ascendancy beyond a possibility of being supplanted, was the personal attachment, which he shewed upon every occasion for his master, whose pleasure appeared to be the only object of his attention and regard; and to which he was ready to sacrifice the strongest ties of nature. Of this he had the good fortune to give an early instance of such a nature, as made reason and passion equally join to confirm his empire over the prince's heart.

He had fallen in love with a most beautiful and accomplished young lady, heiress to one of the richest nobles of the kingdom, and was so happy as to have his passion not only returned by her, but also approved of her father.

In the overflowing of his heart, on this joyful occasion, he described his intended bride in such rapturous terms to the prince, that he raised his curiosity to see her, when her charms made such an impression upon his heart, naturally susceptible of every warm sensation, that he could not refrain from gazing at her with an earnestness too plain to be misunderstood, though respect restrained them from seeming to take notice of it. Inattentive to the consequence of such an indulgence, the prince repeated his visits so frequently, that the lovers took the alarm, and she feigned sickness, to waive an hour which began to give them pain.

The manner in which he informed the prince of her illness, opened his eyes to the nature of it. He took the hint in a proper light; and, as he had never had any particular design in visiting her, found no difficulty in resolving to go no more. But it was easier to form than to put such a resolution. Her beauty had taken too strong possession of his heart to be so easily expelled, and he was actually in love, without having suspected such a thing.

As respect had made the favourite conceal his fears, delicacy kept the prince in silence also. He resolved to subdue his passion, however difficult the attempt; and would seem to understand a suspicion that implied a bribe of his generosity. But his behaviour soon betrayed the conflict in his breast. He grew melancholy, fought

sought retirement, and particularly avoided the company of his favourite, whose happiness, though he would not obstruct, he could not think of without pain.

The other immediately perceived the criticalness of his situation, and was in the highest distress how to a between love and ambition ; for he too plainly saw that one must be sacrificed, to secure the other. While he was in this suspence, an unexpected event decided the difficulty.

The king, whose age had not cooled his passion, happened one day to speak warmly in praise of the young lady's beauty ; her lover, who was present, was sufficiently acquainted with his temper, to see the consequent of this. He knew that he had been all his life a professed votary of love, and had never stopped at a thing, however unjustifiable, to gratify his desires. Convinced, therefore, that he must inevitably lose his mistress, his ready genius suggested it to him to dispose her in such a manner as should turn the loss to his advantage. He instantly waited upon the prince, and throwing himself at his feet, with an air of the most passionate and respectful tenderness, " What (said he) is the cause of this gloom which hangs upon my prince's brow ? What uneasiness preys upon his heart, which he conceals from his faithful and devoted servant ? Sir, I conjure you, is there any remedy in my power to procure ? If my life, if any thing dearer than my life, can give you but a moment's pleasure, speak, and you shall see that I hold nothing in competition with it."

The prince was so struck with this unexpected address, that he had no power to make any answer ; his silence sufficiently expressed what the other wanted. " It is so, (continued he, embracing his knees, in a well-feigned rapture) my anxious heart divined aright the charms of *Louisa* have attracted your regard. To her ; and may you both be happy. I resign her to a worthier lover. Let what will be my fate, my happiness shall never interfere with yours."

It is impossible to express what the prince felt in such an exalted instance of regard. He raised his

on the ground, and embracing him tenderly, “ No, dear baron! (said he, as soon as he could speak) I not, will not put your attachment to such a severe trial. The very offer you have made is a pain to me dear; and I were the most ungenerous of men, should take advantage of it.

These words, but a few hours before, would have made the baron happy; but circumstances were altered now, and he was resolved to complete the obligation, appearing to bestow what he could not keep. He therefore repeated his offer so strongly, that he at length subdued all the prince’s scruples, and brought him to a compliance which his heart panted for.

---

## C H A P. VI.

*tinued. A mirrour for the female mind. Fear and resentment triumphant over love and virtue.*

UT this was much the easiest part of his undertaking. The prince’s inclinations assisted his arts, but his mistress’s were on the opposite side. She really loved him, and had beside so high a sense of honour and virtue, that it seemed in vain to attempt persuading her to take a step so contrary to her principles, and so destructive to her passion. But he was not easily discouraged by difficulties. He had conquered her own love, and his opinion of female constancy was so high as to make him despair of the same success with her; though he judged that some address might be necessary to save appearances. He went to her, therefore, directly, when he left the prince, and put on an air of the deepest distress, on her inquiring eagerly what ailed him, burst into a flood of tears, and turned from her; the regret which he really felt at the thought of losing her assisting his design. She was struck with such strange behaviour, she eagerly asked him what could be the matter? when looking wishfully in her face for some moments, “ O Louisa! (said he) must I lose you? Why have I not power to support my right against the lawless invasions of tyranny;”

Good

Good Heaven ! (exclaimed she, terrified and amazed) what can you mean ? What tyrant invades your right ? Or who should take me from you ?"

" And have you not heard of it then ? (said he) Has not the mandate yet arrived, that is to tear you for ever from my arms ? Give orders to be denied every one, even to the king. Let them say you are confined to your bed, or any thing, to prevent your being seen. I must leave you now ; but I will return privately, in half an hour, when it will be dark, and unfold the whole of our misfortunes to you." — Saying this, he left her abruptly, with all the appearance of distraction and despair.

The astonishment and terror with which this struck the lady, may be easily conceived. She instantly gave the orders he desired, and withdrew to her chamber, where she waited for his return, with the most anxious impatience. At length he came ; and, being admitted with every alarming circumstance of caution and fear, after some most passionate exclamations at the severity of his fate he acquainted her of the king's having happily taken a liking to her ; the consequence of which was, that he would certainly enjoy her either by persuasion or force.

The character of the king made such a story probable, especially as a woman wants but little proof of the power of her beauty. She seemed astonished at the news, and expressed the strongest concern ; vanity glistened through her grief, and the many particular questions which she asked betrayed a levity at least, which lessened her in her lover's eyes.

As soon as she had recovered herself, however, from the first emotions of her surprize, she asked if there was no way of escaping such a misfortune ? and even proposed an immediate marriage, to prevent it ; but he replied, that such a rash expedient would only provoke the king's resentment to his ruin, without being of any protection to her, as he had shewed, on many occasions, that he made light even of that sacred tie, when it interfered with his pleasures.

When he had let her dwell upon her fears for some time, which he still heightened by new circumstances of danger, from the capricious and cruel temper of the king, whose fatal effects, the objects he was one moment fondest of often felt the next, the least violent of which was to be immured for life in a convent, he at length answered to her repeated intreaties of devising some way for her to escape such a misfortune, that he knew but of one which would prevent the king's demands; but at the same time would be equally destructive to his own hopes.

"O name it! (said she eagerly, terrified to death at the thought of a convent) Name any thing that will save me from him; and Heaven will inspire us with the means for acquiring every thing else afterwards."

"The prince (answered he with a sigh) the prince can save you from him."

"Why do you hesitate then to apply to him? (interrupted she eagerly) his friendship, his goodness will do every thing."

"Say rather his love; (replied he) for that alone can do it."

"His love! I understand you not."

"Nothing but the love of the son can save you from that of the father. You must instantly resolve, before, which you will accept of. The king wastes time in courtship. He will apply directly to your daughter, and tempt his ambition with some gilded bait; if that should not prevail, what subject can resist a monarch's power? The ministers of his pleasures may be this moment at the gate."

"Direct me, Heaven! Is there no other way, other method of avoiding this dreadful alternative? He has declared, the prince — he has never declared. What shall I, can I do? No! I will die first. Let us this instant fly this hated place. It were better to live in a desert, than under subjection to such tyranny."

"O my Louisa! It were happiness to live any where with you; but, alas! whither could we fly to escape his power? We should only heap tenfold ruin upon our heads by such an attempt. Not since I cannot

be blessed with you myself, let me consult your happiness. The prince loves you, passionately loves you. His eyes, his whole behaviour, has long since declared it. He is generous, tender, and constant; and with him I shall at least have the consolation of seeing you happy: consider the difference between being dragged away by violence to the loathsome bed of an old impious tyrant, the best release to be expected from which is to be locked up for ever in a convent; and yielding to a young and amiable prince, whose heart doats on you?"

— Then seeing that her resolution began to waver, "I will go (continued he) this instant, and resign my pretensions to him; and make him believe that sacrifice to his favour what is the effect of irresistible necessity; for he knows not of his father's intentions. Do you, O Louisa! imitate my example, and, appearing ignorant of our misfortune, yield as if from inclination. It will enhance the favour, and establish his love on the solid basis of esteem. I'll go this instant and send him to you. A moment's pause for thought would lead me into madness and despair. Take care to be denied to every one but him."

The situation in which he left her is hard to be described. Her love for the baron, her principles of honour and virtue, all resisted the complying with the prince; but, on the opposite hand, there was no other way of escaping from his father; and the baron's making the proposal raised a resentment that almost balanced her passion for him; for she would have had him meet ruin rather than think of parting with her.

In this distress, she formed a thousand different resolutions; but was still unresolved till the arrival of the prince decided the conflict; when the reluctance with which she yielded confirmed him in the opinion of her love for the baron, and consequently of the greatness of the sacrifice he had made to him, to prevent the lessening the merit of which, by a discovery of the motive, the latter took care to make the prince's amour immediately public; which prevented the king's taking any farther notice of her.

his affair, which in the beginning threatened to the baron in the prince's favour, by this prudent engagement secured it to him for ever. He thought possible that a man, who had made such a sacrifice, should not be as faithful to his interest in every instance; and the king, his father, soon after dying, signed the reins of government absolutely into his hands.

## C H A P. VII.

*Curry of favouritism concluded. The necessary effects of ridicule. Ministerial use of unlimited power; with natural consequence of ill-placed confidence.*

THE first use which the new minister made of his power was to traverse the measures, and remove the ministers of the late king. To reconcile his master to a step so contrary to the natural mildness and leniency of his temper, he had long taken every opportunity to decry the understanding of the late king, and to turn all his ways into ridicule. Every man has peculiarities which will not bear to be shewn separately, and in an unfavourable light. Not considering that he was surrounded of many, equally inconsistent, and reprehensible, the young king had insensibly accustomed himself to insult with, and deride the oddities and foibles of his master, which his favourite was never weary of displaying in the most ludicrous light.

The sting of ridicule is always poisoned. Though the first mark it marks is at first so slight as even to be overlooked, the deadly venom soon spreads through the body, and infects the most distant parts. From laughing at the late king's foibles, the transition was easily made to hold his most serious measures in contempt. He was a fool in one thing, could not be wise in any; and were the servants, who could prostitute themselves as to minister to his folly, worthy of trust from a master.

The court immediately assumed a new appearance. The office of honour and profit was filled with the minister's

nister's creatures; while the king, who saw only with his favourite's eyes, looked so coldly on all who disdained to enter themselves into that ignominious list, that they forbore coming into his presence, where they were sure of being insulted by those whom but a little before they would have scorned even to speak to; and left him environed with a mercenary band, joined by their common interest in a confederacy, to keep honour, truth, and justice at a distance from the throne.

In the mean time, the minister was not at a loss how to maintain the influence he had acquired. He flattered the king's taste for pleasure and magnificence, and diverted his attention from every thing that looked like business; embarrassing with innumerable difficulties every motion which he did not immediately suggest himself; while he contrived so, as that all his own schemes met the readiest success.

The importance which this management gave him with a prince naturally indolent and voluptuous, is obvious. Sure to be gratified in every thing he liked, he thought himself happy in having one upon whom he could so entirely depend, to ease him of the care and fatigues of government. Not that his minister presumed to obtrude his opinions directly, or seem to dictate to his master; on the contrary, he insinuated his sentiments with such delicacy and address, that the king mistook them for his own, and imagined he governed the man who directed his very thoughts.

But this happiness was far from being solid. The affections of the nobles, who were the real ornament and support of the throne, were alienated from the sovereign, by a partiality equally injudicious and disgraceful; and the people, who saw the taxes under which they groaned, and which were more than they were able to bear, lavished upon an insolent favourite and his greedy followers, swelled with discontent and indignation, which threatened to burst in a storm that should shake the throne; while the minister, as if he was impatient for his fate, lived in a magnificence that exceeded even that of his sovereign, and was an insu-

Nor did he stop here. Scorning to have the effects of his power confined within his master's dominions, he madly involved himself in the intrigues of the neighbouring princes, and entered unprepared into a war in which he had no concern. The consequence was what reason might have foreseen. His sovereign was driven from his capital, his country was laid waste, his cities plundered, his palaces, on which he had expended so much care and cost, spoiled of all their magnificence and riches, and his subjects compelled to serve in the armies of his enemies; and to compleat his misfortunes, his reception from those to whom he fled for refuge, cold and insolent to such a degree as gave him too just reason to apprehend their proceeding to actual rebellion, and tearing the crown from his head. Yet amidst all this ruin, though evidently the consequence of his favourite's counsels, the latter still preserved his ascendency by the same flattery which first acquired it, and made him persist in his wild schemes, chusing that he should plunge into the gulph to the brink of which he had brought him, rather than enter into measures of accommodation, in the course of which his eyes might be opened, and his indignation raised to deliver himself from such a state of slavery, and take the reins of government out of such unworthy hands.

"Unhappy is the people (said I to myself, shocked at so gross an infatuation) whose king is governed by a favourite! Unhappy is the king who lets another stand between him and his people; who sees not with his own eyes, nor is able to redress their grievances, and reward their merits from his own experience; but, besieged by a set of sycophants whose aim is to deceive him, is kept in a state of darkness and delusion, till he is awoke from his dream of happiness by the stroke of ruin."

I was diverted from these reflections by the entrance of the minister to his sovereign. "I congratulate your majesty (said he, with an air of exultation) on the most fortunate event that could have happened. The king of Spain has at length declared for our allies. The wealth and power of that mighty kingdom will over-

whelm those haughty Islanders, and oblige them to withhold the assistance which has hitherto supported your enemy; so that you are now delivered from the graceful necessity of accepting terms from him."

" Is it possible (answered the king) that he can have been prevailed upon to break a neutrality which has been so advantageous to him? Who has been able to make him take such a step? Or what motives can have urged him to intrude himself, as I may say, into a country in which he may lose much, and can gain nothing?"

" The motives, replied the minister, which should influence every sovereign. A generous indignation, see the different branches of his own family oppressed, and a prudent care to stop the progress of their enemies in time, before their power should become so great as to be dangerous to all their neighbours. All will go now as we wish. Your majesty's enemies will be humbled in the dust; and you will return to your capital in triumph, strengthened by your victorious allies, to subdue this rebellious kingdom also, and make it hereditary in your family. Will your majesty honour me with your presence this evening, at an entertainment which I design on this happy occasion. I have something to shew you that will give you pleasure. The painter and statuary whom I sent to Italy are returned, and have brought some of the most curious and valuable remains of antiquity in their several arts. There is one in particular most remarkably fine. It is a statue of *good fortune*, dedicated by *Marius* on his last triumphant return to Rome, from whence he had been driven by his enemies. I was just looking at it when this account from Spain arrived, and own that I was affected with so striking a circumstance."

" I wish it may prove an happy omen; (answered the king, somewhat elated at the news, and still more pleased with the account of the arrival of the painter and statuary) but we must hope the best. What is it o'clock? I'll go directly. I have a mind to see your new acquisition, and ask those people some questions about *Herculaneum*."

Such an infatuation was too gross. I could bear it no longer; but turned away, sick at heart, from the mortifying sight.

## C H A P. VIII.

*The scene changed. A national character. Another great man. Curious account of an inn, with an entertainment of political puffs.*

THE motives which the minister had alledged for the king of Spain's entering into the war, wore such an appearance of plausibility, that I resolved to visit his court, that I might see if all his measures were conducted with equal prudence and spirit.

I had seen enough of the country in which I was, to satisfy my curiosity; nor did I desire to travel again through the scenes of military glory, exhibited by those around it. I therefore *wished* myself directly into Spain, but at more distance from the court, that I might have an opportunity of observing the manners of the people, which, I apprehended, seldom appear in their genuine colours there.

The first thing that struck me, on my arrival, was the poverty in which the middle and lower ranks of the people lived. The real wants of nature are very few; but the conveniences which human ingenuity has discovered to make life more agreeable, (I speak not of the vitiated cravings of luxury) and which custom has made almost indispensable, comprehend a wider circle. Of these they were in a manner as utterly destitute, as if they were incapable of the arts which could procure them.

The compassion, which such a state of wretchedness must naturally raise, was soon turned into contempt, when it appeared to proceed wholly from themselves. The face of the country shewed that nature had most amply done her part to make the inhabitants happy; but every assistance of their own was wanting: and after a long and profound peace, the defects of idleness

equalled the ravages of war in other countries. The lands were uncultivated, the cities in ruins, and the people wretched. Yet, amid all this, a pride peculiar to themselves appeared in every word and action, that made their misery ridiculous; but then at the same time it also enabled them to bear it, by diverting their attention from their distresses to their imaginary importance. They looked upon themselves as superior to the rest of mankind; and in consequence of this opinion submitted without repining to the severest wants, rather than debase their dignity by the exercise of any industry or art.

While I was making these remarks, I happened to take notice of two men, from whose conversation I learned that they were going to court. They were Frenchmen, and by their equipage and dress appeared to be persons of distinction: but I directly saw through their disguise, that they were ecclesiastics of the order of the Jesuits, who concealed their character for a special purpose. My opinion of those religious made me attach myself to them without hesitation, as the best guides I could possibly have.

When I joined them, they were entering the yard of an inn to which they had been directed as the best in the town. At the door of it sat a man who appeared to be in the vigour of life, healthy, strong, and formed for any kind of exercise or labour. Though the day was uncommonly hot, he was wrapped close in his cloak, with one leg thrown carelessly over the other knee, and his elbow rested on a heap of stones, which seemed to have been piled up as a buttress, to support the wall of the house, while he lolled back, lost in the contemplation of his own consequence.

As the travellers advanced to the door, one of their servants called aloud. The Don, without deigning to move a limb, or discompose the gravity of a single feature, having eyed him for some time, vouchsafed to ask him what he wanted. "We want (answered the elder of the two gentlemen) some body to take our horses, and shew us into the house."

"Yonder is the stable (replied the Spaniard, pointing to an hovel half of which was tumbled down, and the

the rest ready to follow) you may put your horses there, and by that time the people of the house may be at leisure to come to you."

"At leisure! (returned the gentleman impatiently) is not this an inn!" Then calling again, an old woman half naked came out, and going to take his horse; "What, woman, continued he, vexed at being kept broiling so long in the heat) is there no other servant beside you? Where is the master of the house?"

"Here I am (answered the don, rising deliberately and adjusting his whiskers) what is your business with me? I suppose you do not expect that I should wait upon you?"

"By no means, sir, (said the other, who did not desire any altercation with such an adversary;) I only want to have some of your servants called."

"It is very well; (answered the host) the woman will put your horses in the stable; and you may follow me into the house."

The travellers, who directly saw into their host's character, thought proper to accept his polite invitation; and attended him into a room, the furniture of which consisted of two or three broken stools and an old table; but the very wretchedness of it proved at this time a convenience; the cracks in the walls drawing an air on every side, that was the best refreshment they seemed likely to find in such a place.

When they were seated, the gentlemen turned to their host, who had not waited for an invitation to sit down with them, and asked him what they could have for dinner. "Sir, (answered the other) the house is plentifully provided with every thing, as my wife will inform you when she comes; I mind not these matters." Then stroaking down his whiskers, with great solemnity, "Pray, gentlemen (continued he) what news is there? I hear the wrath of the king is kindled against the English; and that he is determined to extirpate their whole nation: It is a glorious resolution, and worthy of his power and magnanimity. I only wonder, why he has suffered them upon the earth so long."

As he said this, the mistress of the house entered, and after the customary cant of being exhausted by an extraordinary run of company of late, confessed that all her house afforded was some bacon and eggs. "For," (said she) "this unlucky war has ruined us all. We used to have fish fit to entertain an abbot, and flour that made bread white enough for the king's table; but now we have nothing at all. They pretend indeed to comfort us, with leave from the pope to eat flesh; but they do not tell us where we shall get it. I wish those who advised his majesty to this war, may be the first who perish in it."

"Silence, woman, and mind your own affairs!" (interrupted the husband, with a tone of authority) "how should you know any thing of peace or war? Leave those matters to us, who understand them."

His wife obeyed the sovereign mandate without reply, and retired; when he, swelling with double importance from such a triumph, "When we have subdued these English (continued he, addressing himself to his guests) "we shall be better supplied with those things, and many others than ever. They will be obliged to bring them to us as tribute, not for sale; and to perform for us all the servile offices of trade, which it would be a dishonour to a Spaniard to defile his hands with. Our slaves in America work better than when they had their liberty. Beside, they are heretics; and it is a sin, as well as a disgrace, to be at peace with such. Our curate preached us an excellent sermon to this effect, last Sunday; when, among other things, he told us, that all the catholic powers had at length agreed to join and root them out. It is a glorious and pious undertaking. Since the holy wars there has been nothing like it."

As their sumptuous fare required not much time for preparation, the entrance of it interrupted this magnanimous politician here, at which he seemed not better pleased than the travellers were with their entertainment.

While they were refreshing themselves as well as they could, I took the opportunity of going to see the

town, the inhabitants of which I found most exactly characterized by the innkeeper and his wife; all those who applied to any kind of industry repining, like her, at the war; and the drones of society, who starve in idleness, vapouring with him of conquest and glory.

## C H A P. IX.

*Wheels within wheels. Certain great transactions deduced from unsuspected causes; with the advantage of having two strings to a bow.*

AS soon as the heat of the day was abated, the travellers continued their journey; when the elder addressing himself to his companion, " You seemed surprised (said he) at the odd composition of our host; but a little acquaintance with these people will make it familiar to you. Pride and poverty are the characteristics of this nation, not only in his low sphere, but also in the very policy and government of it, in which they maintain a struggle that makes them justly held in contempt by the rest of the world."

" If that is the case, (answered the other) I am the less surprised at their entering thus madly into a war, for which they appear to be so ill-provided; though, I own, the caution with which they avoided it so long gave me a better opinion of them; and I should be glad to know what motives induced them to alter a conduct which they seemed to understand the advantages of so well."

" The measures by which most of the nations in the world are governed (replied the former) are so inconsistent not only with reason and justice, but even with themselves, each day producing a new system contradictory to the last, that you must not expect a satisfactory account of them. As an instance of this, the motives of the Spaniards for entering into this war are hidden, even from the persons who think they are the authors of it; and who,

" unknown

“ unknown to themselves, are serving a cause which  
“ they had rather ruin.

“ It may be necessary to explain this to you. The  
“ jealousy which the power of our order has for some  
“ time raised in the very courts, whose favour princi-  
“ pally exalted it to that power, has at length burst  
“ upon us in a storm, not to be resisted in Portugal,  
“ and threatened not much less in France. To avert  
“ this misfortune required the utmost address. Our  
“ influence in Spain, though rather in decline, is still  
“ considerable. This we obliquely proposed to the  
“ French ministry, to exert in their behalf, to bring  
“ the Spaniards to assist them in a war under which  
“ they were ready to sink, on condition of their pro-  
“ tecting us from any farther disturbance in France;  
“ which they accordingly have promised.

“ The lure which we held up to the Spaniards, to  
“ draw them into a measure so contrary to their inter-  
“ est, was the crown of Portugal. We know, by  
“ experience, that it was not possible to make the  
“ court of Lisbon break with the English. We there-  
“ fore first inflamed the ambition of the Spanish min-  
“ istry, by blazoning their king’s claim to the Portu-  
“ guese throne in the strongest colours; and persuad-  
“ ing them that this was the proper opportunity for  
“ asserting it, when the hearts of the people were alien-  
“ ated from their sovereign by the disasters of his  
“ reign, and the English so taken up with the wars in  
“ which they were already engaged, that they could  
“ afford him no protection, though he was so bigotted  
“ to their alliance, that he would certainly give a co-  
“ lourable pretence for attacking him, by refusing to  
“ enter into the confederacy against them. Our scheme  
“ was successful. The Spaniards, without consider-  
“ ing farther, broke with the English, and we obtain-  
“ ed the protection, for a time at least, which we de-  
“ sired in France.

“ But this was not our only motive for urging this  
“ court to take these measures. The wound we have  
“ received from Portugal is not to be forgiven, nor to  
“ be healed but by the ruin of that monarchy. If the

“ Spaniards

" Spaniards should be able to establish the claim which  
" we have spirited them up to assert, our revenge will  
" be amply gratified; though could we even foresee  
" the contrary, that would make no alteration in our  
" measures. The war itself, be the event what it will,  
" must in some degree wreak our vengeance, and be  
" of farther service to us, by diverting to other objects  
" an attention that boded unfavourably to our hopes.  
" Weighty as these reasons were, we had others  
" still of greater importance, which we pursued with  
" a policy so deep as to defy detection. You know that  
" the great object of our attention has long been to  
" establish an independency in some part of the world.  
" A thorough knowledge of the present circumstances  
" of Europe convinced us, that we must not think of  
" such a thing there. We therefore naturally turned  
" our eyes to America, where the weakness of the pos-  
" sessing powers was a temptation as strong as the  
" riches and fertility of their possessions. By both  
" these the dominions of Portugal were from the be-  
" ginning marked out for our attempt; to give success  
" to which we have, for near half a century, been  
" labouring to make that crown break with England.  
In that case, we should have immediately joined  
with the latter, and, by giving them a share of the  
spoil, gained the assistance of their naval force, to  
execute our designs. But the Portuguese were too  
wary, and for once understood their own interests too  
well to go so far, though we absolutely led them,  
in many instances, to act in such a manner to the  
English, as would have drawn the resentment of a  
people less prudent upon them.

" Being disappointed in this our first scheme, all  
that remained for us to do was, to make the like at-  
tempt upon the Spaniards, against whom we intend-  
ed to turn the same weapons at a proper time; and  
doubt not but, by the help of the English, we  
shall be able to accomplish our design of erecting an  
empire in some part of their American dominions,  
while they are pursuing the chimerical claim we  
have set them upon here, and wreaking our revenge  
upon Portugal. As to the equity of these measures,

" that

“ that never comes into question till after the event.  
 “ If they are successful, no one will deny it; if not,  
 “ they will be condemned, though dictated by the voice  
 “ of Heaven. Thus you see that, at any rate, the  
 “ war must answer some of our purposes, at the same  
 “ time that we do not appear to be in the least con-  
 “ cerned in it.”

“ I am much obliged to you for this account; (said  
 “ the younger) which sufficiently explains the motives  
 “ of your engaging so warmly in matters apparently  
 “ so little interesting to you. I should be glad also to  
 “ know by what arguments you can have persuaded  
 “ the court of Spain into measures evidently so con-  
 “ trary to their interest. The voice of the people  
 “ who seldom judge wrong, is loud against the war.”

“ Gold, my friend! (answered the other) Gold, the  
 “ great persuasive of the world, was the argument we  
 “ made use of. This was the weight which set the  
 “ main spring of the machine in motion. The specious  
 “ pretext indeed that covered it were prudence and  
 “ honour; which a proper application to their natural  
 “ vanity made the crowd receive without examination  
 “ not to omit religious prejudice, that absolute tyranny  
 “ of weak minds.

“ We persuaded them, that it was a derogation from  
 “ their honour to see a prince, so nearly allied to their  
 “ mighty monarch as the king of France, distressed in  
 “ such a manner; that his conquerors, if not stopped  
 “ time, would fall upon them next; and that it was  
 “ serving the cause of God, to attack heretics. By  
 “ these various arguments we have gained our great  
 “ point of making them break with the English; but  
 “ our trouble ended not there. It will require equal  
 “ address, and infinitely more pains, to keep up their  
 “ spirits, and prevent their quitting it as poorly, as  
 “ they undertook it rashly. This is the occasion of  
 “ my coming here at this time; and as the brilliant  
 “ abilities you are known to possess, and the strong  
 “ attachment you have to our cause, have made the  
 “ whole order expect the greatest things from you.  
 “ I choose you for my companion and associate, and

" have given you this general view of the present state  
" of affairs here, to direct your own observations in the  
" course of our most delicate and difficult negociations,  
" and enable you to act in case any thing should hap-  
" pen to me."

This account, which I have here thrown together,  
was the substance of several different conversations,  
during their journey to Madrid.

---

### CHAP. X.

*More great matters. Home truths. A character out of  
nature; with a new definition of the laws of war,  
and a certain method of reducing a nation to obedience.*

THE morning after they arrived, the elder went to wait upon the first minister. The silence and solemnity which reigned through the whole court struck me with respect. " Certainly, (thought I) the Jesuit must have misrepresented these people. Instead of the hurry, noise, and giddy bustle, so offensive in other courts, every thing here bears the appearance of seriousness, which is the shadow of wisdom."

The first sight of the minister confirmed me in this opinion. He was dressed in black cloaths, whose hue added a gloom of additional gravity to his whole appearance. By his looks and motions, his soul seemed to be wrapped in the most intense thought. His eyes were fixed; his features all strained to the strongest attention, and his steps slow and stately.

When the ceremonials of address were performed with proper punctuality, and the attendants dismissed, the Jesuit entered directly upon business. " I am come (said he) according to your excellency's desire, to settle every thing that may have been omitted, and conclude the treaty; for which purpose I have brought the proper powers from his majesty my master; who has also honoured me with the pleasing office of delivering to you some particular tokens of his esteem."

" I am

“ I am obliged to his majesty ; (answered the Don, with an air of more than ministerial importance) he does me justice in believing that my inclinations are to serve him ; tho’ what I have undertaken is really most difficult, if not dangerous. We have declared war as you desired ; but how we are to carry it on is hard to say. Our magazines are empty, our troops not half compleat, and even these undisciplined and badly provided ; and our marine, far from being in a condition to cope with that of the enemy ; so that really I am almost afraid to look forward to the consequences.”

“ Your excellency will pardon me for saying (replied the Jesuit) that your apprehensions are too ready ; you have money, and that will soon procure every necessary of war. The wealth of our enemies alone overpowers us ; but with the addition of yours we shall be as much too powerful for them. You will have the honour of serving us in so critical a conjuncture ; nor is there any danger in the attempt. They are tired of the war, and want a pretence for making a peace, as much as we want peace itself. The inconsistency of their temper, never long pleased with any thing, is surfeited with successes. To take the advantage of this humour our emissaries have set their ministers together by their ears in such a manner, that they think of nothing but supplanting each other ; to effect which they would willingly sacrifice every interest of their country.

“ Of this I can give you an instance, that will remove every doubt. The king having lately thought proper to change his ministry, those who were turned out from a spirit of resentment, move heaven and hell to blacken the characters and decry the abilities of their successors ; and, as disgrace with the prince is the sure means of favour with the people, exert their popularity with the utmost licentious boldness to make them distrusted, and defeat their measures, chusing to undo all their own work, and lose every advantage gained by the war, rather than the rivals should have the honour of bringing it to a happy

happy conclusion ; while the latter, with equal judgment, think it necessary for them to retort the abuse, and act directly contrary to the system of the others, as it were in justification of their removal ; as if a king were the only master who had not a right to change his servants when he pleased ; and thus, while this altercation goes on, the business of the nation stands still.

“ Advantageous as this is to us, it is not the only good effect we promise ourselves from these disputes. The old ministry, who pursued the war so obstinately while they had the management of it themselves, will, by this indiscriminate opposition to all the measures of the new, force them into a peace on any terms, to preserve their power ; for however finely it may sound in speculation, a minister who will sacrifice his own ambition to the interest of his country, and resign his power to his rival rather than have the business suffer by a competition for it, is a character if not absolutely out of nature, yet so rarely to be found, that there is no necessity to guard against it ; so that both parties equally serve our interest, by their animosity against each other.

“ From this plain state of the matter, you may see that you run no hazard in joining with us, as a peace must necessarily and speedily be the consequence of the measures we have taken ; and whatever expence you may be at, will be amply paid by the conquest of Portugal, which you will never have such another opportunity of annexing to the crown of Spain, if you miss this : besides that so close a connexion between your court and ours, will henceforward enable them to give law to the rest of Europe, and yours in particular, at a proper opportunity to recover the many parts of your dominions which have been torn from them, in the former division of our interests.”

“ According to your reasoning then (said the Spaniard) there is no necessity for our making any extraordinary efforts but in Portugal, which I am very glad of, as we were never so unprepared.”

“ No !

“ No ! (answered the Jesuit) nothing extraordinary  
“ or that can be attended with inconvenience, is necessary. But still, something must be done, if only  
“ to save appearances. Your laying siege to Gibraltar——.”

“ Gibraltar ! (interrupted the minister) that is impossible ! absolutely impossible ! We are as well able to besiege the whole island of Britain, as Gibraltar. We have no provisions made which could give us least hope of success to such an attempt.”

“ Your excellency is too precipitate. (answered the jesuit) Success ! If by success you mean taking I never thought of any such thing. No ! All we propose is to raise a ferment in England, and give their ministry an excuse for making a peace. We are sufficiently sensible that it cannot be taken.”

“ But if we should make the feint, (replied the minister) do you really think the English will ever suffer us to conquer Portugal ? They are bound by interest as well as honour, to defend it.”

“ I grant they are, (returned the Jesuit) but it signifies nothing. Set but their ministry to wrangling among themselves, and you may bring them into any thing. Their desertion of the Catalans, on a similar occasion, is an instance of what the Portuguese may expect by depending on them.”

“ Why, indeed, that is an encouragement. (said the other) and therefore we will do all we can to be ready to take the advantage of it.”

“ I am glad to find that affairs go on so well in Portugal ; (said the Jesuit) the people, as I travel through the kingdom, are full of spirits at the good news ; and every one eager to have a share in the conquest.”

“ Yes ! (answered the minister) if they could get by vapouring at home. As to the good news, it is necessary to propagate such, to amuse the population, but, in reality, our troops advance but very slowly, and meet difficulties every day, which we did not foresee. If the assistance promised us by your country does not arrive before the English join the enemy——.”

“ Assistance——.”

" Assistance ! (interrupted the Jesuit) Never let it be said that the mighty monarch of Spain wanted assistance to over-run the little kingdom of Portugal. It would be an indelible disgrace to your honour to accept assistance. As to the English, I have told you already how they will be taken off ; and then you will have the Portuguese entirely at your mercy. But has your excellency considered of the advice I took the liberty to hint to you, of extirpating the present race of inhabitants by every severity authorized by the laws of war, that is, by every method which the conquerors please to make use of. Their hatred to your nation is such, that it is impossible ever to reduce them to a proper degree of subjection and loyalty. Above all things, there should not be one of the race of the present king or even of the nobility left, as experience shews that they will watch every opportunity to revolt, and assert an independence, in the same manner as this family gained the crown by rebellion."

" What you say (answered the minister) agrees entirely with my own opinion. I had resolved upon this from the first moment I thought upon the war. I am just now going to attend the king, and, as matters of such consequence cannot be conducted with too much caution, will obtain an order expressly to that purpose, under his own hand, to the general of his forces, to vindicate me from the odium of such an unpopular measure. His natural turn is to cruelty ; so that he will most gladly take the hint. In the mean time, you may assure his majesty of France of every service in my power, to humble his haughty enemy, and procure him the peace he desires "

Satisfied with the success of his negociation, the jesuit then withdrew, and the minister composed his countenance into proper gravity, to appear in public

The natural pride and ostentation of the Spaniards first made me something surprised at the freedom and candour with which the minister confessed the weakness and wants of the Spanish government : but a moment's reflection explained his conduct, and shewed

ed

ed that he acted with the strictest consistency of character. He had suffered himself to be gained by briber to serve the interests of France, and therefore could not pretend to assume a consequence, or to make a vain parade of power which he could not exert, to the very agent who had corrupted him, and was beside as we informed as himself.

## C H A P. XI.

*A peep behind the curtain. Royal amusements; her principles and valour; with an approved shield against certain terrible dangers.*

WHEN the minister had gone through the ceremonies of his levee with proper dignity, he went to his master. The king appeared to be in the prime of life, hale, strong, and active. He was seated at table with a parcel of shuttle cocks before him and meaning a racket with as much earnestness as a school-boy of seven years old.

The moment he raised his eyes from his work, and saw his minister, “ Come (said he starting up, and stretching himself to his shirt) I have been waiting for you some time. I’ll try if I cannot beat you more shamefully to day than I did yesterday.”

The minister who knew his cue, forgot all his gravity in an instant, and following the royal example of him, threw off his cloaths also, and taking up a racket prepared for the attack, which he seemed to maintain with as much eagerness and delight as his master, till he saw him begin to be tired, when feigning himself unable to strike another stroke, he dropped the racket out of his hand, and sat down puffing and blowing on the fly, while the king, to shew his superior abilities, and insult his antagonist, gave half a dozen strokes more himself.

As soon as they had recovered their breath, and were on their cloaths, “ May it please your majesty, (said the minister, resuming his solemnity) I have just received an account from Portugal. Your invincible

arms bear all before them, and will soon reduce the whole kingdom. They have already taken a considerable village, and burned two farm-houses."

"Have they so? (interrupted his sacred majesty) that's well done. Send them orders to burn all before them. I wish I was with them. I love such sport in my heart. I'd soon make their king rue his refusing my friendship. But how soon will they take Lisbon? I long to go there, and see how it looks after the earthquake, whether it is any thing like Herculaneum."

"Your majesty's army is advancing toward it, (answered the minister) but the roads are bad, and the country-people oppose them, so that they are obliged to march with great circumspection."

"Why do not they shoot them? (replied the monarch) If I was there, not one of them should escape. I'd kill them all myself, as I'll shew you just now. The enemy is drawn up ready for battle, and I only waited for you to see me attack them."

Then going into another apartment that looked to a close court, and leading his minister to the window, "There they are (continued he, laughing with delight, as he pointed to a number of cats which were immured in the court;) there is the army of the enemy. The red ones are English, the rest are Portuguese. Go, reach me those guns yonder. I'll attack them directly. It will be a glorious surprize. While I shoot with one gun you shall load the other, so that we'll keep up a constant fire."

With these words he began the attack, shouting in triumph at every shot, "There falls an Englishman. There a Portuguese! Now I charge them on the right; now on the left; now in the front; now in the rear. I'll shew them that I am a general. See how they run! helter skelter, pell mell!"

His heroic majesty carried on his attack in this manner with such eagerness, and continued it so long, that his minister was more tired of loading for him, than he had been of his match at shuttlecock; at length

length observing that one of the wounded cats screamed in an uncommon manner, "A truce! a truce!" (said he) your majesty should slacken your fire. The enemies acknowledge your victory, and send a trumpet to desire leave to bury their dead. According to the laws of war, that is never refused: beside, if you kill them all to day, what will you do for an army to attack another time? There is not one cat left in all Madrid; your majesty's wars have consumed the whole species."

" Well then, (said the victorious monarch, who was by this time sufficiently fatigued himself) I will grant them a truce; and do you take care that there is a supply of provisions sent them. Their magazines, I imagine, are nearly exhausted; I scorn to starve my enemies. Hah! hah! hah! Don't you think now that I could kill all those Portuguese? Egad, I'll go and head my army myself, as I did once before, and not let one of them escape."

The smoak of the monarch's artillery, and the screaming of the wounded cats making the field of battle not a very agreeable place to stay in, the king and his minister returned to the closet. As soon as the latter had once more composed his features, " May it please your Majesty, (said he) by the accounts from your invincible army in Portugal I find, that it is in vain to think of reducing that people to subjection and obedience. Those who submit one day rebel again the next; so that there is no end of giving them quarter. Beside, the English are expected every day to land to their assistance, and then their numbers may prove troublesome. I am therefore come to know what orders you will please to send to your generals, to direct their conduct."

" Orders! (answered his most sacred majesty) to put them all to the sword; that is the surest way to make them obedient. As for the English, we must take care what we do with them: they are all heretics and magicians, and deal with the devil. I remember very well how they frightened me once before, till I got the pope to bless my night-cap; and then I de-

" fled

ed them and their witchcraft too. They could do me no harm while I had that on. I am sorry that it is worn out, or I would go and have a stroke at them myself; but I could never bear to be one minute without it, while there hung a rag of it together. However, I'll send to him for another; and, at the same time it would not be amiss to send enough for the whole army, and his holiness might bless them all together; and when the soldiers have got them, they'll be a match for the heretic English, and the devil to help them."

What your majesty says is extremely right, (replied the minister) and it would be very improper for you to hazard your sacred life, before you have gotten such an infallible defence to guard it. In the meantime though, will your majesty please to send orders to your generals, for putting the country under military execution? They will have double weight, when under your own hand."

Aye! (returned the gracious monarch) give me pen and ink, and I will write to them this instant, to burn and destroy all before them, and put man, woman, and child to the sword, without mercy or distinction. Or stay, it will do as well after the puppet-shew; I am in haste now: and, do you hear! order publick rejoicings to be made; and send to the bishops to sing *te Deum* for what we have already done."

It was some time before I could recover myself from astonishment and horror with which this scene struck

"Just Heaven! (thought I) are these thy substitutes on earth? Can the vices of man have sunk him entirely below thy care, that he should be given thus to the most despicable destruction? be made a play-thing of a fool, and slaughtered for his mere infatuation? I can bear the sight no longer."

On this, I flung out of the court, in honest indignation, and *wilshed* myself directly into France, in hopes of being relieved by the contrast between the manners of that dissipated, gay people, and those where

"If I must be among fools, (said I) let them

" be

“ be merry ones. Let not the affectation of wisdom  
“ make folly more disgusting.”

## C H A P. XII.

*Scene changed. Pleasant instance of the power of example. Grand attendance at a lady's toilet. Secrets of favouritism.*

THE effect which I felt from this change is scarcely to be conceived. The smile of pleasure and complacency that softened every face I saw, soon dispelled the gloom which I had contracted in the late solemn scene, and infected me also to such a degree, that my features began insensibly to relax into a grin, and could hardly keep my feet from capering as I went along with the crowd, whom I found going to pay their court to the King's mistress.

They all stopped in the antechamber to her apartments, where they waited with the most complaisant patience for the return of the favoured few who were admitted into her presence, to learn from them the modes of thought and action which she pleased to prescribe for the day.

Curious to see a person who was able thus to rule the happiness of so many, I entered the dressing-room where I found her at her toilet, attended in a manner that exceeded my imagination, accustomed as I was to uncommon scenes. At her feet kneeled a bishop, in his sacred robes, buckling her shoes. The basin which she washed her hands was held by a peer of the first rank. A counsellor of the parliament painted her cheeks. A farmer of the revenues set her jewels in order. A general powdered her hair. An admiral tied her ribbons; and, to entertain her, a cardinal read a loose lampoon.

When this important work was finished she arose and rewarding her happy servants with a gracious smile, retired with the cardinal into another room, to transact upon business. As soon as they were alone, “ Your ladyship, I think, (said the cardinal, laughing)

been grandly waited on this morning. Pray, have you the same attendance every day?"

" If I would receive it, (answered she) I might have ten times more. There is nothing so fulsome that those sycophants will not say; nothing is so servile that they will not do. I know the baseness of their souls, and therefore trample them thus under my feet, to anticipate the insults which I am sensible they would heap upon me on any reverse of fortune. As they worship the sun-shine of court-favour, it is but just to let them toil in the heat of it for a while."

" But how did your ladyship gather such a groupe? (interrupted the cardinal, who seemed not much to like some part of what she said, and therefore was desirous to put a stop to reflections so general). Almost every profession in the state had a representative at your toilet."

" Yes, (replied she) and I design to set most of these representatives at the head of their professions too; which was the occasion of my desiring to see you this morning."

" But does your ladyship know (said the cardinal) whether they are qualified to fill those places? Many of them require particular judgment and experience."

" Qualified! (interrupted her ladyship, with a contemptuous smile) Yes; I have taken care to be satisfied that they have all the qualifications I want; and as for any other, they are answerable themselves; so let them take care of that. I am to give them all their definitive answers this morning; so if you will go into that closet, you may over-hear what passes, and will be a judge of their qualifications."

The cardinal obeyed; and her ladyship ringing for one of her attendants, ordered him to let the general w she was at leisure to speak with him.

As soon as he entered, " Well, sir, (said her ladyship, cutting short all compliments, and entering directly upon business) I have spoken to the minister about you, and am sorry to find there are so many objections made, that it will be necessary for me to ex-

"ert my utmost interest to serve you. However, as  
"have undertaken it, I will not be foiled."

"I am under infinite obligations to your ladyship  
(answered the general) and shall endeavour to make  
"a return." —

"Sir, (interrupted she) the return I expect is  
"punctual performance of your proposal; which was  
"to give me two thirds of all (exclusive of your pay)  
"that you can possibly make by this commission, and  
"well what you can subtract from the superfluous ap-  
"pointments of your own army, as the plunder and  
"spoils of the enemies. You remember, sir, that this  
"was your own proposal."

"I do, Madam, (answered he) and shall faithfully  
"perform it, though really the appointments of the  
"army at present are so very short, and even these  
"badly supplied, that I fear what may be saved from  
"them will not answer your expectation, though I  
"will do what I can; in an enemy's country soldiers  
"may shift for themselves. But whatever this is  
"short shall be made up in the other article. The  
"enemies have had a long opportunity to enrich them-  
"selves, which will turn out well to your account  
"now. I'll strip them to the skin for you. It is good  
"policy to ruin an enemy's country which we do not  
"design to keep possession of; as it disables them from  
"making head again for a considerable length of time.  
"I hope also to conduct the military operations of the  
"campaign in such a manner, that your ladyship shall  
"not be ashamed of having recommended me to your  
"command."

"As to that, sir, (replied she) it is no affair of mine.  
"You are to take care of that upon your own account,  
"and I wish you may, if it were only to disappose  
"the presages of those who opposed your promotion.  
"Some of whom went so far as to say, that you were  
"destitute of every qualification necessary for so im-  
"portant a charge." — Saying this, she turned from  
him, leaving him to enjoy the pleasure of meditating  
her last words.

The departure of the general made way for the entrance of the admiral, who was summoned next.

hom her ladyship addressed with as little ceremony as  
e had shewn to the former.

" You have been recommended to me, sir, (said she)  
by one of my women, to whom, I understand, you  
have the honour of being related, as a proper person  
to be entrusted with the command of a fleet, to  
cruize upon the enemy; and, on her vouching your  
merit, I have got you preferred before several offi-  
cers of known ability."

" I am eternally devoted to your ladyship, (answered  
he, elated at his success) and hope I shall be so happy  
as not to disappoint your expectations in any respect."

" I hope not, (replied she) and, as I confide in the  
character given me of you, have not yet expressly  
stipulated any conditions; but you must not imagine  
upon that account that I do not expect any. You  
know the nature of the command which you are to  
go upon. It is to attack the enemy's trade, and  
plunder their settlements in those places where you  
expect to meet the least resistance. Now, sir, in ex-  
ecuting such a commission you must certainly make  
many valuable captures; three fourths of the clear  
produce of which I shall expect, for procuring you  
the command, the rest you may divide among your-  
selves. If you approve of this, your commission  
shall be made out directly."

" I am too sensible of your ladyship's favour (re-  
turned he) to dislike any thing you propose. As  
for myself, I have nothing in view but honour; and  
that, at least, I shall have an opportunity to acquire."

" Honour, Sir! (interrupted she hastily) How do you  
mean? If it is by fighting with the fleets of the ene-  
my, you quite mistake the matter. Instead of that,  
you must use all possible care to avoid them, and not  
run the hazard of disappointing the design upon  
which you are sent, and losing the fleet entrusted to  
you in attempting to acquire honour. Acquire pro-  
fit, and leave honour to the enemy."

" Yes! —— But please your ladyship, (answered  
the seaman, who did not so well relish the latter part  
of his instructions) how shall I answer that to the  
king? I shall be broke with infamy."

“ Never fear, (replied she :) do you take care to  
 “ make a profitable cruize, and I will protect you  
 “ from all danger of that kind; and perhaps make  
 “ interest also to have you sent out again with a greater  
 “ force, when you shall not be under a necessity of  
 “ observing such caution.” Encouraged by this, the admiral promised to obey her orders, and went away with a high heart.

The admiral was succeeded by the farmer-general who, advancing to her ladyship with a confident air,  
 “ I have taken the liberty (said he) to bring your ladyship a suit of jewels, which I hope you will like.  
 “ I should not presume to offer them, if they were not  
 “ fit for the first sovereign in Europe to wear.”

“ You are always very obliging, (answered her ladyship, casting her eye carelessly upon the jewels “ as she took them) they are indeed pretty enough.”

“ Your ladyship does not see half their beauty; (replied the farmer) if you will please to look a little closer, you will have a better notion of their value.  
 “ I beg your pardon, sir, (returned she, taking notice of the paper they were wrapped in, which was a bill of exchange for a great sum of money) I like them extremely. They certainly are very fine; and I must say that you have the politest method of sending any thing of any man I know. I have waited to see you for some time, to let you know that your proposal is accepted of.”

“ I am much obliged to your ladyship (answered he) and shall strive to merit your favour on all occasions; though really I am not quite free from apprehensions of meeting with such difficulties in this affair, as may make it much less advantageous than is imagined. The people are so exhausted by the multitude of their taxes, that they declare themselves unable to pay any more, and in their despair express a discontent little short of rebellion; so that I believe we shall be under a necessity of calling for assistance from the army to levy any thing.”

“ And you shall have it, (replied her ladyship) whenever you require it. That is a proof of the

being exhausted, indeed! If they are in want, let the men all list in the army, that is the proper place for them; and then the women and children will have enough. Don't you shew the least tenderness to one of them. It only encourages the rest. Their complaints are all feigned. If they were in such distress as they pretend, their spirits would hardly be so high.

"I shall punctually observe your ladyship's directions, (returned he) and depend on your protection, if any thing should happen."

The counfeller of the parliament succeeded the far-  
mer-general, to whom her ladyship addressed herself with as little ceremony as the others. "Sir, (said she) I have considered of what you said to me, and fear the scheme is impracticable. Your people seem too refractory to be influenced by such methods."

"Madam, (answered he) I must beg leave to say, your ladyship's apprehensions are groundless. I know the temper of every man among them, and what will prevail on each. If you please to make the experiment, I will answer for the event."

"Well, sir, (replied she) then it shall be so, and you shall have the place on the terms proposed; though, if your scheme succeeds readily, I shall expect a farther consideration, as it will then be much more valuable."

"Your ladyship (returned he) may depend on my obedience to any thing you require."

"That's true, (added her ladyship, calling him back just as he was going out of the room) there is one thing which I had like to have forgot mentioning, though indeed it was plainly implied in what we said. It is likely that the Jesuits will offer large sums of money, to avert the storm that threatens them. That, you know, I am to share in, equally with the other perquisites of your place."

"Why — really — (said he) if your ladyship insists upon it — ; though, as it is but a contingency, it is difficult to bring it within any rule."

“ Sir, (answered she warmly) I do and will insist upon it; and think it odd for you to make any difficulty.”

“ No, Madam! by no means, (replied he) I made no difficulty at all; but till your ladyship had declared your pleasure it was impossible for me to fore-see it. Is there any thing else?”

“ No, (returned her ladyship) not that I recollect now. If I should think of any thing farther, I will let you know.”

The next who was admitted to an audience was a nobleman who had held the bason to her ladyship, she washed her hands. “ I am sorry my lord duke said she, (as soon as he had paid his compliment) that I have been obliged to make you wait so long but business, my lord —.”

“ Your ladyship (answered his grace, with the most complaisance) need be under no concern. I am no stranger myself to the urgency of state affairs.”

“ Well, my lord, (said she) at length I have the honour to congratulate your grace on your son’s success. His majesty made many difficulties at first but they all vanished when I told him of the match between the marquis and my cousin. He said, could refuse nothing to any one who was to be all to me.”

“ My son is in duty obliged to his majesty, (replied his grace) and I have a just sense of your ladyship’s favour.”

“ I am glad, my lord, (continued she) that you good sense and prudence have enabled you to conquer that absurd pride of family, which makes so many. Though your son’s intended wife is the daughter of a mechanic, she is my kinswoman, and, if I live, I’ll make the proudest peer of France glad to marry into my family. The king is a fountain of nobility, and what he can bestow I shall not want.”

“ Your ladyship’s own merit (answered he coolly) makes it an honour to any family to be allied to you. I will send my son to return his thanks to your ladyship, and receive your farther commands.”

The bishop was now the only one who remained ; but her ladyship had already had too much business that morning, and therefore sent him word, that she could not see him till some other time.

## C H A P. XIII.

*Make hay while the sun shines. All go to the market where they can have most for their money. A conversation concluded in character.*

THESE important matters being thus dispatched, the cardinal came out of his closet, and smiling at her ladyship, “ It is a pity (said he) that your ladyship cannot publicly assume the office of prime minister, you do business in such a masterly manner.”

“ Why, (answered she, laughing) I have no notion of making many words, when I have resolved upon a thing ; nor of using the agency of others in what I can do better myself. They always make such bungling work, that I have no patience with them. Plain-dealing prevents mistakes. Beside, they cannot get such good terms as I do. People chaffer and haggle with them, who do not in the least object to what I require. As to the breach of decency, I despise it. I study my own convenience, not other people’s opinions.”

“ Your ladyship judges very rightly ; (replied he) great minds are above the rules which direct the conduct of their inferiors.”

“ Well ! (resumed her ladyship) do not you think now that all these persons are properly qualified for my purpose ? I hold my power by a very precarious tenure, and therefore think it prudence to make the most of it while it lasts. What is the interest or honour of the kingdom to me ? I know that with the king’s favour I gained the hatred of every other person in the kingdom, and that on the loss of that I should feel all the weight of the latter ; to avoid which I’ll take care to provide what shall make my retreat elsewhere comfortable, for I will never stay

“ a moment after I become subject to their insults  
“ and for that very reason I send my money before me  
“ as fast as I can.”

“ Then your ladyship (replied the cardinal) is resolved on going to England!”

“ Most certainly; (said she) What other place could I expect the same safety or satisfaction in? A person that has but money enough to give into the extravagancies of the mode will never want an agreeable reception there. As to the difficulty you made about going with me, there is nothing in it. There will be no more objection be made to your character than to mine. As soon as the novelty is worn off, we shall pass as unnoticed as we can wish, and meet as much respect as we can pay for. The pope himself, so leniently as he is abjured, would find a welcome in England for his money; so that you need not be so delicate and timorous. It is but laying aside your red hat, and you need apprehend nothing.”

“ Your ladyship (answered the cardinal, who did not much like the manner in which she spoke these last words) cannot think that I should make any difficulty of following you to the remotest part of the world. The happiness I enjoy in your favour exceeds every other consideration. As to those people who have been with you this morning, is it your pleasure that I should mention them to the king; or will your ladyship rather do it yourself? Those I mean whom the importance of the employments which you design them for makes it necessary to observe such caution about. There will be great murmuring at their promotion among the nobility who have applied for those commands.”

“ Let them murmur on; (replied she haughtily) despise every thing in their power to say or do! I’ll humble their pride, by shewing them how little regard them. I made the duke wait so long to-day, let him see that his son’s marrying my relation gave him no consequence with me. As to this affair, I speak to the king myself, for form-sake; but you may order their several commissions to be got ready in the mean time.”

“ Reall

" Really, (returned the cardinal) I think you gave  
" his grace sufficient reason, even after he was admitt-  
" ed, to see that you held him not in very high res-  
" pect. But how came you not to see the bishop?  
" Had he any particular business?"

" Business! (said her ladyship, after a loud laugh)  
" Yes; and that no less than a cardinal's hat, I assure  
" you. Because I got you one for gartering my stock-  
" ings, he finds his pretensions on buckling my shoes.  
" Hah! hah! hah! It is true he offers fair. He un-  
" dertakes to be either for or against the Jesuits, for  
" or against the *constitution*; in short, any thing, or  
" every thing I please, now, or at any other time."

" Pious prelate! (added the cardinal, after he had  
" joined in the laugh) he has a most convenient con-  
" science, and cannot fail to rise in the church. I pre-  
" sume you have not rejected such ample offers."

" I am not resolved about him yet; (replied she) I  
" must try his patience here first for a while. When I  
" have broken him sufficiently by attendance, I'll then  
" consider whether it is proper to gratify his ambition,  
" or give him a refusal."

Their political conference was broken off here, by  
one of a softer nature. The cardinal was too gallant  
not to dedicate some part of his private audience to  
love, and her ladyship too tender to refuse his addresses.  
After some time spent in dalliance, the cardinal recol-  
lected that the king was by that time returned from  
hunting, and accordingly hastened away to wait upon  
him; while her ladyship prepared to receive the visit  
which his majesty never failed to pay her every day.

## C H A P. XIV.

*A curious, though not an uncommon picture. Play a trout properly, and you'll catch it. The fascination of ease.*

IT was not very long before the king arrived. From the nature of their connection I expected that their meeting would be attended with the warmest expressions of passion; but there appeared no traces of any such thing between them. The king entered her apartment with a listless, indifferent air, as if he knew not what else to do with himself; and lolling into a chair, scarce returned any answer to her enquiries after his health; which she also expressed with the coolness of compliment and words of course.

When he had sat, or rather dozed thus for some time, in a kind of suspension of thought, he seemed as it were to awake, and turning to his mistress, gave her an account of his morning's sport, as particularly as if she understood it as well as himself; while she listened to him with the greatest attention and appearance of pleasure, asking him every now and then such questions as should lead him to repeat those passages in which she saw he took the most delight.

When his spirits were somewhat raised in this manner, and the lady thought him in a proper humour for her purpose, she artfully turned the conversation upon business. "I hope (said she, as if carelessly and only from common curiosity) that your majesty has received agreeable accounts from your armies this morning."

"I hear there are expresses arrived."

"Ay, (answered he) so the cardinal informed me; but I suppose they have brought nothing material, as he said no more."

"I cannot help thinking it very strange, (continued she) that such powerful armies as your majesty sends into the field do not bear down all before them. Your enemies are no way able to oppose them with equal force. I should fear that there must be a fault somewhere." — Then observing that he seemed to listen

to her with some attention, " Is your majesty certain  
" (continued she) that the generals to whom you intrust  
" the conduct of your armies are equal to the charge,  
" or at least that they do not protract the war, for the  
" sake of continuing in their commands ? Something or  
" other must be the reason of it "

" Why, yes, (replied the king) I have often thought  
" so myself; and therefore I believe I'll even now make  
" a peace, and so have done with them all."

" A peace ! (exclaimed she suddenly, equally sur-  
" prised and alarmed at the word) I did not know that  
" your majesty had any thoughts of peace ; to be sure,  
" it is most desirable — on proper terms."

" I can't say (returned he) that I should have any  
" thought of the kind in the present situation of affairs,  
" if so many miscarriages did not in a manner force me  
" to it. It is very disagreeable to be disappointed in all  
" my great designs, and that after so vast an expence  
" of blood and treasure.

" Disappointed ! (returned her ladyship, who now  
" took her cue) Your majesty can never be disappoint-  
" ed in any design, till you are pleased to drop it. In-  
" ferior princes, who want power to execute their will,  
" may be disappointed ; but not a monarch, whose word  
" is a law to millions." — Then raising her voice, and  
assuming an air of indignation, " A peace ! No ! (con-  
" tinued she) Your majesty will never think of a peace,  
" till your enemies are brought to beg it on their knees.  
" It were beneath the dignity of your crown, and a  
" lessening of your honour. As for the trifling successes  
" which have dejected some of your own subjects as  
" much as they have elevated the insolence of your ene-  
" mies, one campaign, properly conducted, will effec-  
" tually reverse them. Shall it be said that the mighty  
" kingdom of France, governed by a prince equally  
" the delight of his people, and the terror of his foes,  
" was obliged to receive the law from a few mecha-  
" nic islanders ?"

" But what can be done to prevent it (answered he)  
" roused from his lethargy by the spirited manner in  
" which

“ which she spoke). They tell me, that my revenues  
“ are quite exhausted, and my subjects crying out for  
“ peace.”

“ Who tells your majesty so? (answered she) A  
“ dastardly slothful set, who, regardless of your glory,  
“ think of nothing but enjoying in luxurious ease the  
“ fortunes they have amassed by every iniquitous means.  
“ The revenues of a king of France can never be ex-  
“ hausted, while his subjects have a penny left. All  
“ the wealth in your kingdom is yours. You are not  
“ obliged to beg from your people, as the king of Eng-  
“ land does. As to their seditious cries for peace, if  
“ your majesty was to pay attention to them, you would  
“ never carry on a war; and for their wants, they are  
“ all feigned. Look around your court, look at those  
“ very people (traitors I had almost called them) who  
“ tell you such stories, and see whether any thing like  
“ want appears about them. Perhaps they mean that  
“ the populace is dissatisfied, because they cannot live  
“ in such luxury, as they do themselves. If they really do  
“ want, why do not their compassionate advocates assist  
“ them out of their abundance, without applying to  
“ your majesty? Are you only to suffer for the wants  
“ of the people? Must your glory, your honour be  
“ given up, to save the superfluous wealth of your no-  
“ bles? The very thought is treason; and no loyal  
“ subject would harbour it himself, much less presume  
“ to suggest it to your majesty. Every one who men-  
“ tions peace till your enemies are humbled, and all  
“ your great designs accomplished, is a traitor to your  
“ interest and glory?”

“ But if I continue the war, (said the king) how  
“ can I be sure of better success than I have met with  
“ hitherto?”

“ Change the persons who have the conduct of the  
“ war (answered her ladyship, who had now drawn  
“ him to the point she wanted) and never doubt of the  
“ success. You have hitherto employed the nobility,  
“ who look upon the command of fleets and armies as  
“ their birth-right, and consequently take no pains to  
“ acquire that military knowledge which alone gives  
“ just title to command, and promises success; but up-  
“ on an  
“ their  
“ peace  
“ those  
“ a tru  
“ your  
“ obtai  
“ insole  
“ your  
“ Bu  
“ know  
“ T  
“ pleat  
“ at th  
“ for v  
“ ty:  
“ your  
“ ing v  
“ latte  
“ desir  
“ excu  
“ taxes  
“ talk  
“ mana  
“ make  
“ Wh  
“ ter s  
“ bled.  
“ whic  
“ W  
“ to th  
“ who  
“ I wi  
“ plish  
“ their  
“ dera  
“ e exp  
“ eroisn  
“ om  
“ and, re  
“ conque

"on any misfortune, though evidently occasioned by  
"their own errors, grow weary of the war, and advise  
"peace. I would remove them all, and employ only  
"those who have given instances of merit equal to such  
"a trust; and who having no dependence but upon  
"your majesty's favour, shall omit nothing possible to  
"obtain it; nor, when their own ambition is satisfied,  
"insolently presume to advise your majesty to sacrifice  
"your glory to their ease."

"But where (replied he) shall I find such persons? I  
"know of none."

"There are enough, (returned she) if your majesty  
"pleases to make use of their service. I myself could  
"at this very time name both a general and an admiral,  
"for whose success I would be security to your majes-  
"ty: and as to your revenues being exhausted, and  
"your parliament uneasy, I have just now been talk-  
"ing with a counsellor, who undertakes to make the  
"latter as implicitly submissive to your will as you can  
"desire: as I also know a farmer, who will make no  
"excuses of the people's incapacity to pay your majesty's  
"taxes. All the difficulties which those peace-makers  
"talk so much of are owing solely to their own mis-  
"management; and they are unfaithful servants, who  
"make so many obstacles to obeying your commands.  
"When the proud lazy nobles see that you can be bet-  
"ter served without them, their insolence will be hum-  
"bled, and they will strive to merit the employments  
"which now they in a manner demand as their due."

"Well! (said the king, who was now worked up  
"to the proper pitch) be it so then. Let those people  
"whom you speak of be employed. I am resolved  
"I will hear no more of peace, till I have accom-  
"plished my designs. I will not submit my will to  
"their's, nor postpone my glory to such mean consi-  
"derations." — Then rising from his chair in a heat,  
"he expressed several sentiments of magnanimity and  
"heroism, as he walked about the room, till, cooling  
"from his passion, he sunk into his former serenity,  
"and, returning to his chair, took a nap, to dream of  
"conquests and glory, to compose his spirits for his  
"dinner;

dinner; while his mistress dispatched a billet to the cardinal, to let him know that she had settled every thing, and he might give their several commissions to the persons she had appointed in the morning.

“ By what despicable agents (said I to myself, turning away in disgust) does Heaven work the most dreadful events! How weak is the thread by which a mighty people are guided! At length I see the mystery of favouritism. To leave the mind absolutely at ease, watch its ruling passions, and, without seeming to have any thing else in view, artfully suggest the objects of one’s own designs, as the means of their gratification. My soul is sick of vice and folly. I’ll seek relief in that happy land where a free people is governed by a king who is himself free, before such manifold abuses of the blessings of Heaven, as have for some time engrossed my attention, make me hate my own nature, and abjure the name of man.”—Saying this, I wished myself directly into England.

---

### C H A P. XV.

*The scene changed. A pleasing prospect suddenly overcame me. An easy way to get rid of a wrangler; with a comfortable plaster for a broken head. He that throws dirt always fouls his fingers.*

**O**N my arrival in England, I found myself near the seat of a nobleman of the first rank, in that part of the island which lay next to France, not having thought of any particular place when I wished myself from thence.

The largeness of the house, and the flourishing condition of the extensive demesne around it, shewed the wealth of the owner; as the smile of content on the faces of his tenants proved his generosity and justice. Industry procured plenty, and liberty sweetened at the same time that it secured enjoyment.

Struc

Struck with the contrast between this, and the scene I had lately seen, I shared sympathetically in the general joy; and in the honest pride of my heart resolved to please myself with taking a more particular view of the man whose virtues diffused such happiness around him. But what was my surprize and disappointment, to find the prospect overcast where I expected to have seen it brightest! In his own family, and where his more immediate presence should have operated with the greatest force, ambition had banished harmony, and poisoned every breast with animosity and rancour.

The flames of this dissention, which had long been smothered, burst out with the most ridiculous violence, just at the time I entered. Though such a domestic scene as this was a descent from those *great* ones which had lately been engaged in observing; yet, as it displayed the inconsistency of the human heart in a new light, I thought it merited my attention.

The occasion of the breach was this: One of the lord's agents, who, by the activity and sanguineness of his temper, had in a manner engrossed the whole management of his master's affairs, had taken it in his head to go to law with one of the principal gentlemen in the neighbourhood, from an apprehension that he intended to take the part of a cousin of his, with whom his lordship had had a long suit for encroaching upon his side of the common.

The agent had conducted this suit with equal judgment and success, and at a very great expence, (for it was not his disposition to starve any cause he took in hand,) foiled his adversary in all his attempts, and not only recovered from him the places he had unjustly possessed himself of, but also obtained several decrees for costs, by which he turned him out of so many other parts of his estate, that he had not left him a penny to see an attorney to carry on the suit any longer, though his proud and litigious temper would not permit him to give it up.

Matters were in this situation, when the agent proposed filing a bill directly against the cousin, who (he said he had received undoubted intelligence) had entered

tered into a private agreement with the other to supply him with money to go on with his law-suit, and assist him also with his interest to recover his losses. This was a direct breach of a former agreement between him and his lordship, by which he had obliged himself not to meddle in the dispute at all; the agent was so falling upon him without any ceremony, alledging, that it was much better to be plaintiff than defendant in any suit; as must certainly be their case if they were no before-hand with the other, who was at that very time preparing to attack them, as appeared by several instances of his behaviour.

To this proposal his lordship did not think proper to give a determinate answer, till he should consult with the rest of his tenants and servants; as by their leave they were all bound to defray the expences of any suit which were for the general good of the estate. But when the agent acquainted them with his design, though he supported it with very strong reasons, and which in the sequel proved to be well founded, they were all of a different opinion, and said, it would be very imprudent to intangle themselves in a new dispute before they were out of the old, especially as they were already at a greater expence than they could well bear.

The agent, whose temper was too warm to brook opposition, without any respect to his master's presence, flew into a violent passion, and called them a parcel of poor-spirited trimming fellows, who would lose a pound to save a penny. They were not behind-hand with him in abuse, but said, that he was a hot-headed beggar upstart, who, having no fortune of his own to lose, cared not what expence or danger he drew others into.

The lord thought it but just, in such a case as this, to follow the opinion of the majority, and therefore rejected the agent's proposal. But he did not give up on that account; but resolved to try another method, by which he did not doubt of carrying his point. The great success with which he had managed his master's business ever since he had been employed, had made him such a favourite with the tenants, and given him beside so great a consequence in his own eye,

that he thought his lordship could not do without him, and would therefore submit to any thing rather than part with him. Full of this opinion, he went to him next morning, and giving him up his keys, in a kind of pet, told him, he was sorry he could not serve his lordship any longer, as he thought proper to prefer other people's advice to his.

His lordship, as if he had been prepared for the thing, received the keys very calmly ; and telling him he was also sorry to lose so good an agent, dismissed him most politely, with thanks for his past services.

This was a stroke the other was not prepared for. He stood thunder-struck for some moments ; then, bursting into a flood of tears, kissed his lordship's hand passionately, and, declaring himself overcome by such goodness, said, he was ready to spend the last hour of his life in the service of so kind a master. The consequence of this he thought would have been, that his lordship would directly return him his keys, and reinstate him in his employment, for he was far enough from designing to resign it : but he found himself disappointed in this also. The lord, much as he valued him for his abilities and honesty, both of which were unquestionable, had for some time felt the warmth of his temper, not without uneasiness, and was glad of so fair an opportunity of getting rid of a servant who had shewed on many occasions, as well as this, that he meant to be master ; not doubting but he had others in his family capable of managing his affairs with equal fidelity and judgment.

The situation of the late agent on this occasion may be easily conceived. He retired to his own house, and throwing himself on his bed, gave his mind up to the most mortifying reflections. But what he felt from his own thoughts was nothing to the vexation he received from others. Such an affair could not in the nature of things be long kept a secret. The moment it came to the ears of his relations and dependants, that he had lost his employment, they all flocked about him, croaking like so many ravens about a carrion : some of them asking impertinent questions, others giving absurd advice ; this upbraiding him with his rashness, that accusing

cusing his master of ingratitude ; and all lamenting the disappointment of the hopes they had built on his favour, till their noise and nonsense quite turned the poor man's head ; the consequence of which was, that in his delirium he wrote a letter to the clerk of the parish, which he was to read at the vestry, giving as a reason for his throwing up his employment, that his lordship truly would no longer to submit to be guided by him ; and therefore he did not think proper to serve him any longer.

This effectually clinched the affair. If his master had even been inclined to over look what had passed and take him into his service again, the folly and insolence of this letter put it out of his power ; as it would have been plainly acknowledging, that he resigned himself absolutely to his guidance.

The late agent's enemies did not fail to exaggerate this unaccountable conduct in the most malicious manner ; but his lord viewed it in another light, and justly imputing it to madness, not only took no notice of it, but also, to comfort him in his distress generously gave him an annuity sufficient to support him in the rank of a gentleman, expressly as a reward for his past services ; and wrote a letter with his own hand to his wife, who was an high-spirited dame, and came from a good family, in which he soothed her vanity, by paying her the compliment of calling her a lady.

Though this act of bounty proceeded merely from the generosity of his lordship's heart, the enemies of the late agent gave it a very different turn. The success which the latter had had in his business, and his sanguine professions of regard for the interest of the tenants, had won him their confidence and favour to such a degree, that they immediately looked upon his giving up his employment as a sign that there was some schemes to their disadvantage in meditation, which he would not join in ; and, consequently, that their interests would be betrayed, and the law-suit which he had conducted with so much credit, and brought almost to an happy conclusion, at so great an expence, patched up in a pauplary manner, and all the money lost.

To  
pulace,  
stop th  
chief t  
this pu  
annuity  
crier p  
mediat  
was th  
had sol  
them a  
ever co  
But  
from h  
nants  
be sacr  
manag  
diately  
mindin  
they o  
houses  
had tir  
was ca  
humour  
a pack  
ing bla  
who,  
crew  
names  
village  
have h  
was n  
lousy,  
strel.

To lessen him, therefore, in the opinion of the populace, was considered as the most effectual method to stop their clamours, and disable him from making mischief between them and his lordship's servants. For this purpose, to make the news of his having got the annuity soon enough and sufficiently known, the town-crier proclaimed it at the market cross; and it was immediately insinuated, with the greatest industry, that it was the price of his boasted regard to the tenants; that had sold his influence over them, and engaged to make them approve any measure his lordship pleased, however contrary to their interest and honour.

But though this ruined his consequence, it was far from having all the effect that was expected. The tenants seemed resolved to think that their interest was to be sacrificed, because the person who succeeded to the management of his lordship's business was not immediately of their own chusing; and therefore, instead of minding their work, and going to plough and cart, as they ought to do, they spent their time tippling in ale-houses, and railing at the new agent, even before he had time to do any thing that should shew whether he was capable of the business or not; and for fear this humour should cool, some mischief-making folks hired a pack of ballad-singers, to go about the streets singing black-guard songs of the agent and all his friends; who, to return the compliment, got as scurrilous a crew as the others, who threw dirt and called foul names as fast as they, for their lives: so that the whole village was in an uproar; and any stranger, who should have heard both sides, must have concluded, that there was not a man in the parish who was not a beggarly, lousy, lying, pickpocket, vagabond, cheat, and scoundrel.

## C H A P. XVI.

*A receipt for popularity. Turn a cast-horse to graze on a common. The old steward acts the second part to the agent's farce. An hint by the bye.*

THE lord, whose own good-nature made him wish to live in harmony with all the world, was greatly vexed at such scandalous wrangling thus under his nose; not that he knew it all either: the new agent, who from a long acquaintance had a particular influence over him, let him hear no more of it than he thought proper, contriving to keep every one from him who should say a word which he did not dictate; so that his lordship was made to believe, that all the disturbance and abuse came from the other side, and was levelled at him, as well as his servants.

Though all the servants were glad of the late agent's disgrace, in hopes of sharing some part of that power which he had engrossed so entirely to himself, that they were no more than meer cyphers in the family, the one who rejoiced most openly, was the old steward.

He had been many years a faithful servant, to the best of his knowledge and abilities, to his lordship's family; and though he was never thought to be so clear-headed or resolute in the management of affairs as the late agent, yet he was very useful in some things. He had made a considerable party among the tenants, for this lord's father when he came first to the estate, of which he was apprehensive of having his title disputed by the generous manner in which he gave his beef and beer among them; for he was very well to pass in the world, and never failed to treat the mob with a bonfire and a barrel of stingo every now-and-then; by which means he also won their hearts so, that he had always a party among the parishioners, to choose what office he bade them; so that he was able to carry any point he pleased at the vestry, which, to do him justice, was ever what his lordship directed.

By this extravagant way of living, it is true, he had gone behind hand a good deal; but he never slept

that, he had still something left; and the stewardship, which he had had so long that he looked upon it as his own, brought him in a good penny beside, that enabled him very well to live on at his old rate.

The imperious manner in which the late agent behaved, had made the steward long wish to be rid of him; but he did not know how to bring it about; and, especially at this time, he would not even attempt it, for fear of giving any hinderance to his lord's affairs, which the other managed so well: but when he saw it thus done to his hand he could not contain his joy, but ran up and down to every servant in the house, from the butler to the scullion, poking his nose in their faces, and shaking hands with them on their happy deliverance. Coming among the rest to the new agent, and addressing him in the same manner, "My good friend, " (returned the latter dryly) take care. Do not run mad with joy to-day, nor with grief to-morrow."

The steward's heart was too full to take notice of this speech now, but he understood it when it was too late. I have observed that the new agent was in particular favour with his lord. Though getting rid of that over-bearing wrangler was a great point gained, it was far from being all that he had in view. The stewardship was the thing he had fixed his heart upon. It was the first place in rank in the service, and, by the command of the cash, gave a power of every thing to one who had spirit to exert it; which he was resolved to do to the utmost extent, and not be encroached upon and brow-beaten by any under-servant, as the other had been.

But, though he was sure of getting the place from his lord when it should be vacant, the long services of the old steward, and the interest which his hospitality had acquired him among the tenants, from the wealthiest of whom he had always found means to borrow any money his lord wanted, till the rents came in, made him think it necessary to proceed with address, in getting him turned off. For this reason he paid him uncommon compliments, and let him go on just as he pleased, in expectation of his doing something, now that

that he was free from restraint, that might give a colour for removing him ; but, whether by chance or design, he disappointed his schemes, and proceeded so regularly that he could take no hold of him.

This obliged him to change his measures. Accordingly he gave orders to the receivers under the steward, (some of whom, though brought in by him, and under the greatest obligations to his bounty, basely betrayed him, the moment they saw him totter in his place) to perplex the business of his office as much as possible, and even dispute his orders, which it was not doubted, would put him off his guard, and make him give the advantage that was sought for against him, by doing something irregular in his resentment.

This scheme had the desired effect though not precisely in the manner that was expected. The steward, ignorant of the snare laid for him, in the usual course of his business gave one of the attorneys, concerned in carrying on the law-suit, an order upon the receivers, for a sum of money to clear off his bill of costs. The receivers, as they had been directed, made a difficulty of paying it without an express order from his lordship. This was a direct attack upon the steward's authority. He ran instantly to the lord, and sputtering out his story as well as his passion would permit him, demanded that those insolent fellows should be discharged directly, or he could not do his business any longer.

The lord, who by the bye was prepared for this second part of the agent's farce, answered him carelessly, that he was sorry to lose so old a servant ; and, turning about, walked away, humming a tune. The steward, who had lived in a kind of familiarity with the late lord, could not bear such a slight ; he left the room directly, and ran about the whole house, telling every one he met how ill his lordship had used him.

But he soon found that he had more cause of complaint than he knew of ; for the very next morning his letter of attorney was superseded, and the stewardship given to the new agent, who thus got the whole business into his own hands, having put a creature of his

own into the agency, who dared not to disobey his orders in any thing.

It is not easy to describe the old steward's astonishment at such an unexpected stroke. However, he preserved the dignity of his character much better than the late agent had done; for when he waited upon his lordship, to give him up his keys, &c. he made no mean attempts to recover his favour and keep his place; and when the lord, in the goodness of his heart, offered him an annuity also, being unwilling that he should want in his old days, he refused it with disdain, declaring it should never be said, "that old *True-penny*, who had spent so many pounds in good beef and strong beer, in his lordship's service, was glad to take up with a poultry annuity at last."

Such a return for his labour and expence should have been sufficient to open his eyes to the folly he had been so long guilty of, and have taught him to live frugally and quietly the remainder of his days; but the habit had taken too fast hold on him to be ever shaken off. The moment he went home to his own house, he gathered all his old pot-companions and trencher-friends about him, and fell to carousing as usual, flattering himself with a foolish hope, that they would stand so firmly by him at the next vestry, that his lord should not be able to have his busines done, and therefore must be glad to give him his place again.

While he squandered away the remains of his substance in this idle manner, and his new friend the late agent (for society in disgrace had united them) at brooding over his resentment, and meditating schemes of revenge, the new steward was far from enjoying his triumph in happiness. The fall of his predecessor, who had so long thought himself as firmly fixed as man could be, was a warning to him; and though he took all possible care to secure himself, by filling every place in the family down to the very scullion-boy, with his dependants, and letting no body, as I have observed before, come near his lord, who he was not satisfied was absolutely in his interest, yet his fears every moment formed new dangers to torment him;

him; and he could not see his lord smile upon the most devoted friend he had in the world, without feeling a jealousy of having his own arts played upon himself and being supplanted in his turn as he had supplanted the others.

However groundless these fears were at first, they soon threatened to realize the dangers which were only of their own creation. That openness and gaiety of temper, which first gained him his lordship's favour gave place to gloomy silence and reserve; and the universal benevolence and philanthropy which gave irresistible charms to his conversation, and commanded the esteem of every good mind, were soured into jealousy, envy, and suspicion, that sickened at the mention of a virtuous action.

---

### C H A P. XVII.

*An holiday, and a jolly day. A sumptuous feast, and a raree-show.*

SO many successive instances of folly, which could thus poison a profusion of happiness, and turn it into misery, filled me with the most melancholy reflections; but I was soon diverted from them, by something of a less serious nature.

The constable of the village in which the lord's house stood, in conformity to old customs, made a feast at this time for his lordship and his whole family, to which he sent them a solemn invitation by the parish officers. Such a scene promised some amusement at least. I therefore returned with the officers who had come upon this important errand, desirous to see the whole process of so extraordinary an affair.

As the feast was to be given at the joint expence of the village, the principal inhabitants had assembled at the constable's house, and were sitting over a pot of beer, waiting for the return of those who had been sent with the invitation: though the whole was a thing of course, their anxiety was so great that not one of them could speak a word till their arrival: the more

meant

wide,

VOL.

ment they entered the room, all the rest laid down their pipes, adjusted their periwigs, and wriggling their chairs nearer to the table, listened to the account with open mouths, and looks of the profoundest sagacity.

" Well, gentlemen, (said the constable, who sat in an arm-chair to shew his authority) since his lordship has condescended to accept of our invitation, we should take care that every thing is prepared in the best manner for his reception. There will be many things wanted to make a proper appearance on such an occasion; and no one would stop at a trifling expense, especially as the money will be laid out among ourselves."

This speech opened every mouth in the room at once. We shall all want new cloaths," cried the taylor.

" New shoes," — said the shoe-maker.

" New stockings," — said the hosier.

" New wigs," — said the barber.

" Our horses must be shod," — said the farrier.

" Our houses repaired," — said the bricklayer.

" Our chimneys swept," — said the chimney-sweeper.

" Our vaults emptied," — said the night man.

" We must have a sermon," — said the curate.

" A speech," — said the vestry clerk.

" A vomit, in case of repletion," — said the doctor.

" A clyster," — said the apothecary.

" A coffin," — said the undertaker. In short, every person present asserted the want of something in his own way, to make the entertainment compleat; and the less necessary it was, the louder they roared.

When they had all baulked themselves hoarse, and the constable, by repeated thumps with his fist upon the table, obtained leave to speak, " Silence, gentlemen, (said he) we shall never do any thing at this rate. You are all for providing other things before we have fixed upon the victuals. Let us settle about them first."

This word raised a tumult, ten times greater than the former; every one in the room roaring out at once some particular dish, either that it was his trade to provide, or which he was fond of himself.

The butcher bawled out,—beef.—

The Poulterer,—fowls.—

The fishmonger,—fish.

—“A turtle,”—said an alderman.

—“A ragou,”—squeaked a Frenchman.

—“Pickled herrings,”—belched Mynheer.

—“Potatoes,”—cried an Irishman.

—“An haggis,”—said a Scot.

—“Leek-pottage,”—sputtered Taffy. In a word they all raised their voices with such vehemence, no one attending to what another said, that since the building of Babel, there was not such a scene of confusion.

At length, the contest grew so high that they were just ready to fall together by the ears, when the constable, who sat all the while fretting his guts to fiddle strings at this interruption of his speech, which he looked upon as an insult to his authority, put a stop to the whole tumult by an accident. “Fire and fury” (exclaimed he, raising his voice as loud as ever he was able) are you all mad?”

The word *fire*, which was all they attended to, filled them with affright. They thought the house was on fire, and repeating the cry with equal vehemence, they overturned the table, spilled the beer, and tumbling over one another, made the best of their way out.

As soon as they were undeceived, they returned into the room, and having recovered themselves a little by the help of a fresh supply from the ale-house, the constable, composing himself into proper dignity, resumed his speech: “I say, gentlemen, (said he) that, if we go on in this manner, it is impossible for us to conduct this affair with due decorum. We had better chuse out a set of us who understand these matters to agree upon what is proper; and because there will be a great many things wanted beside victuals and drink, that no business should be overlooked, it will be right to have one of every trade chosen, and then there can be no mistakes.”

This motion was universally approved, and accordingly they proceeded directly to make the choice; but

in this they were very near falling into as great confusion as before, every one being ambitious of the honour. At length, however, and with difficulty, it was settled ; and then the selected few withdrew to the next ale-house, to consult undisturbed upon the affair.

When they were seated and had smoaked a whiff or two, to settle their heads, the constable, who by his office was one of the number, opened their deliberations. " Gentlemen, (said he, puffing out a pillar of smoak) I believe I may say, without vanity, that there is no one in this company who understands these matters better than I do : I keep a good house myself, an hot joint every day, and roast and boiled, both, on Sundays ; beside, my wife, it is well known, was bred up in a gentleman's family, and there learned a proper notion of doing things genteely. It is my opinion, therefore, that you leave the *whole* to me, and I will prevail upon her to give me advice.

" With your leave, Mr. constable, (answered a person who sat opposite to him, and heard him out with great impatience) though it be your luck to be in office this year, there are others in the parish who keep as good houses as you ; and I believe my dame also has as good an opportunity of knowing these matters as another : I serve two or three gentlemen who keep French cooks, and she never goes to their houses with goods, that she does not learn some new piece of cookery from them ; for she is a well spoken body, and always asked to sit down among the upper servants ; and then she is so fond of practising what she thus picks up, that I hardly ever know the name of what I eat ; but she tells me they are quite the mode, and so I submit ; though in truth, I cannot say but I should often prefer a cut of honest old England ; in my opinion there is nothing beats roast firlion."

This eloquent speech was followed by one as eloquent from every one present, declaring his own ability in this important affair, and putting in his claim to it. Length, when all saw that no one would give up his pretensions to another, they came to an agreement, that

ach should draw a bill of fare according to his taste and judgment, out of which they imagined they should certainly be able to make a proper choice.

Accordingly, they all went to work; and the stream which flowed from every mouth, while they were writing, proved with what candour they set down the things they liked best, and how glad they should be to eat them.

The bills of fare, produced upon this occasion, shewed that the English were not degenerated, in their stomachs at least, from their mighty ancestors. Buttocks upon buttocks, and sirloins without number. — Legs of pork, and saddles of mutton. — Fillets of veal and fitches of bacon. — Hams by the dozen, and fowls by the groce. — Flocks of geese, and droves of turkies.

— In short, the quantities of meat, when the bills were all read over together, turned the stomach of every one present, and made them readily accept the proposal of the man of the house, who undertook to furnish out a magnificent feast, if they would leave the whole to him. This great point being thus happily settled, they settled their stomachs also with a glass of right coniac, and then retired to their respective homes, to give their wives an account of these important transactions.

The fuss which was raised among the females upon this occasion, is not to be described. All their finery was immediately drawn forth, and examined; and then such consultations, and disputes with one gossip or another; such a clatter with mantua-makers, and milliners, putting lappets to this, and flounces to that, altering and turning, to set all things in order for making a proper appearance before my lord and my lady, that every house in the whole village was a scene of litter and distraction, from that till the day of the feast; many a poor tradesman sacrificing more than a year's profit of his business to his wife's vanity. Not that the husbands entirely neglected to adorn themselves either; but as their wives care was chiefly about their tails, theirs was confined to their heads, upon which everyone heaped a bundle of grey hairs, as an emblem of his wisdom and experience, more huge than ever grey hairs had a right to be.

upon  
the la  
figure

As  
ment  
scullie  
utterl  
tolling  
old Fr

Germa  
travel  
eakes,  
hard  
and pa  
to tafl

count  
fashio  
made,  
health

Nor  
than t  
presen

matter  
had a

not ne  
absurd

respec

" I  
" E  
" T

" S

A  
hurry,  
village  
streets  
gaping

upon the oldest goat in *Gilead*; he that peeped out of the largest fleece, thinking he cut the most respectable figure.

As for the feast, the ale-house-man was not a moment at a loss in providing it. He had formerly been scullion to a gentleman's kitchen, so that he was not utterly unacquainted himself with the nasty ways of tossing up nice dishes: and now, with the help of an old French woman who sold *Bef-à-al-mode* in a cellar, a German who made *Bologna* sausages, and a Jew who travelled about the country with *ginger-bread* and *cheese-cakes*, he made up a sufficient number of things with hard names, to satisfy the vanity of the entertainers, and poison all their guests, had they been fools enough to taste them; banishing the wholesome victuals of the country to the tables of the servants, as coarse and unfashionable; and giving nothing in the way that God made, or nature required it, for nourishment and health.

Nor were the decorations less elegant and grand than the feast. As every trade in the parish had a representative in the set, to whom the management of matters was committed, it may be thought that they had a proper understanding among themselves, and did not neglect any article, however unnecessary and even absurd, which could possibly be foisted in to swell their respective bills.

---

### C H A P. XVIII.

“ *Impresses quaint caparisons, and steeds;*  
“ *Bases, and tinsel trappings; gorgeous knights,*  
“ *Then marshall'd feast*  
“ *Serv'd up in hall, with sewers and seneschals.*”

AT length the much wished-for day arrived. Words are too weak to convey an idea of the noise, hurry, and confusion, which reigned through the whole village; it seemed as if chaos was come again. The streets, the lanes, the tops of the houses, were filled with gaping crouds, who left their houses, at the first dawn

of the morning, to secure the most convenient places where they might stand fasting all day, to see others go to a feast in the afternoon. Nor were the happy few, who were admitted to the envied honour of seeing them eat, more provident. The thought of such a sight took away their appetites; and besides, they could not spare a moment, from the important work of dressing, to take the least refreshment.

Tired of such complicated folly, I turned to his lordship's house, to see in what light he, and his attendants, looked upon this grand affair. My former knowledge of his natural good sense made me judge that he was above being infected with such absurdities. I was not deceived. He looked with pity upon the extravagance and folly of his tenants, at the same time that he received every testimony of their attachment with pleasure. But his servants were far enough from being so cool. The passion for seeing, and being seen, raged as violently in them as in the villagers themselves, and produced effects to the full as ridiculous.

When it was time for his lordship to go to this grand feast, he was summoned by a procession, from the village, who came to wait upon him. The extravagancies shewn upon this occasion exceed description; devices without design, antics and emblems, destitute of meaning, humour, or ingenuity, led the van; asses in fur'd gowns, and lambs in paste-board armour, march'd lovingly together. Fools, from the hand of nature, drop'd their broad sneers, and grin'd as savages; in a word, every guise, that folly could put on, without even attempting to mimick reason, made up the motley cavalcade and kept the croud agape.

When they had exposed themselves in this manner through the whole village, they ushered their guests into the place appointed for their entertainment, where they were marshalled according to their different ranks. I went with the croud, and took my station in the place from whence I could most conveniently see all that pass'd.

The numbers of every age, sex, and rank, which I saw around me, presented such a complicated scene,

that no

upon n  
grew g  
tinctne  
down  
with a  
" her  
" and  
" mo  
" eve  
I ha  
eyes, I  
before  
" my  
" sen  
" and  
my ey  
mists  
behelde  
racy.

Wh  
gazing  
" my  
" wh  
" Pa  
" nes  
" thi  
" for  
" in  
" par  
" ing  
" flig  
" his  
" he  
" sig  
" sel  
" fin  
" oth  
" pa  
" and

that notwithstanding the extraordinary powers conferred upon me by my guide, my eyes were dazzled, my head grew giddy, and I was unable to view it with that distinctness which alone could give me pleasure. I hung down my head, disappointed and abashed, and swelling with an hopeless sigh, "O that I had my kind guide here now (said I) to deliver me from this confusion and distress, by directing my attention to the objects most worthy of it, and enabling me to overlook every thing else as he did before."

I had scarce uttered these words, when raising my eyes, I saw, to my inexpressible joy, my guide standing before me. "I heard your wish (said he, smiling at my surprize) and am come to gratify it. I see your senses sink under the pressure of such a multitude, and variety of objects" — Saying this, he touched my eyes once more with his wand, when instantly the mists which swam before them were dispelled, and I beheld all things with the greatest clearness and accuracy.

When I had indulged my curiosity for some time in gazing idly round me, "The scene before you (said my guide) is a just representation of the world in which you are. This truly may be called, *The Paradise of Fools*. You have seen with what eagerness and pains these people prepared themselves for this great occasion ; with what anxiety they panted for the arrival of this moment ; and you now see to what a wise end ! In such pursuits is the life of man, in general, consumed. He looks forward to some particular object, paints it in the colours most pleasing to his imagination ; and then, full of the idea, flights the enjoyment of every thing else, and fixes his happiness on the attainment of this ; but when he has succeeded, when that for which he so long sighed, so eagerly laboured, is at length in his possession, his wishes are as unsatisfied as ever, and he finds it is no more than *gaping at a feast, which others are eating.*

"The persons who compose this crowd are principally the inhabitants of the village, and the servants and attendants of the lord and his lady. The differ-

“ ferent pursuits of these two classes of people used  
“ formerly to create as great a difference in their man-  
“ ners and appearances ; but of late the case is quite  
“ altered ; the bounds, which were wont to separate  
“ them, are for the most part broken down, and they  
“ intrude into each other’s provinces without distinc-  
“ tion ; his lordship’s servants, and the gentlemen of  
“ their neighbourhood, practising every mean craft to  
“ get money, for which they were accustomed to des-  
“ pise and ridicule the villagers ; as these, in their  
“ turn, affect all the follies and vices of the fashion,  
“ and with an awkward profusion run into the expences  
“ and extravagancies which used to mark the charac-  
“ ter of the others. Hence you see tradesmen keep  
“ hounds and running horses, and their wives go as  
“ fine as ladies ; while gentlemen turn stock-jobbers,  
“ and compound their debts to cheat their creditors  
“ and this is the reason of that odd contrast, that con-  
“ tradiction of character in every face you meet.

“ Just as these general reflections are, they will be  
“ still more convincing when confirmed by particular  
“ instances. Observe that overgrown heap of morta-  
“ lity who sweats beneath the load of her lace and  
“ jewels. From the splendour of her appearance, you  
“ might reasonably conclude that she was a person of  
“ the first rank ; but examine her nearer, and you will  
“ see that the meanness of her locks suffices the lustre  
“ of her diamonds, and her overacted airs of genti-  
“ lity shew that she is not in her natural sphere.

“ She was the daughter of a country farmer, who  
“ tho’ he had several good farms of his own, was so  
“ bad a manager that he never could keep a penny  
“ in his pocket. To prevent his posterity’s feeling the  
“ same conveniences, he married his daughter to that  
“ person, who sits neither asleep nor awake in yonder  
“ corner, a shop keeper in the village, that she might  
“ be able to go to the till, and take out money, when-  
“ ever she pleased. For some time they had good bu-  
“ siness and went on very well, till he unluckily got in  
“ with some of his lordship’s people, whom he must  
“ immediately imitate in all their ways, drinking and  
“ carousing at every public house in the parish ; while

“ his

“ his wife, not to be less genteel than he, scraped an acquaintance some how at a puppet-shew with one of her ladyship’s maids, from whom she learned all those fantastic airs, and became so fine a gentlewoman, that she would scarce vouchsafe to take the least notice of the green-grocer’s or haberdasher’s wife, at the next door, or indeed any of her old neighbours in the village, with whom she had been intimate before. The consequence of this was, that while she was learning fashions, among her ladyship’s maids, and he tippling at the tavern with my lord’s men, or perhaps treating them at his own house, his shop was neglected, and his business left at fixes and sevens.

“ But their folly is still aggravated by this circumstance, that the persons, for the sake of whose company they do all this, laugh at them the whole time, and would not fail to turn their very ruin into ridicule. Of this they both have had instances enough to open the eyes of any who were resolved not to see. One or two of these may not be unentertaining.

“ As the wife’s education had been entirely in the country, her father took pleasure in seeing her practise all the rural sports he had formerly excelled in himself; by which means she could soon cudgel, vault, and play at cricket as well as any of the rustic swains around her. Of these polite accomplishments she could not forbear boasting, in the pride of her heart, to her new acquaintance; who, to humour her vanity, and expose her folly, not only seemed to approve of them, but also mischievously encouraged her to display her dexterity at them in public company, while, under a sneer of seeming applause, she joined in the general laugh against her.

“ There is nothing that betrays a weak head, into more or grosser absurdities, than imitation. The great emulation among the female sex at present is, who shall gather the greatest number of persons, no matter whether of their acquaintance or not, or how infamous in life or character, provided they

“ dres

" dress well, and will game, at those nocturnal meetings, called with emphatical propriety, *Routs*.

" As this woman's new acquaintance was particularly famous for the multitudes that always assembled on these occasions, she too must have her *Routs*, to shew her politeness and importance. An affair of such consequence required much deliberation. Whom to invite, and where to put them, were the two material questions. The way to the parlour was through the shop; that therefore would not do by any means; and the room up-stairs, which for fashion-sake was called the dining-room, was so little, that three females in full dress could not move in it together.

" After much consultation, a lucky thought at length removed both the difficulties. As the route was desired out of pure respect to her new acquaintance, she judged that it would not be proper to invite any person to it, who was not a fit companion for her. This reduced the number to the constable's wife, and two or three more, and even these were desired to come without their hoops, that they might not incommod her, a compliment, that it was thought could not fail to please her. These difficulties being thus happily got over, the lady was applied to, to fix her own time, and cards of invitation sent accordingly to the rest of the intended company.

" But an unlucky accident had like to have spoiled all, in the very critical minute. When the dining-room was swept out clean, and lighted up in readiness, the mistress of the route went down, and sat in the parlour to be at hand to receive her principal guest, before whose arrival she did not think it proper that the rest should go up stairs. While she waited thus, with heart pit-a-pat, for the rap at the door, the apprentice, who had put on his sunday-cloaths to officiate as a servant out of livery on the occasion, happened to peep into the dining-room, and not seeing a great chair at the upper end of it, as he had observed in the club-room at the alehouse where he used sometimes to go for his master, he

" concluded

" concluded it was forgot in the hurry: He resolved  
" therefore to correct such an over-sight, without say-  
" ing any thing of the matter, that the surprize might  
" enhance his merit with his mistress: accordingly he  
" would not go down for his master's smoaking-chair,  
" that stood by the kitchen fire, but opening the bed-  
" chamber to look for one there, he unluckily cast his  
" eye on the night-chair, by his mistress's bed-side,  
" and never considering what it was, brought it out,  
" pan and all as it stood, and placed it in state at the  
" upper end of the dining-room.

" He had scarce finished this notable piece of ma-  
" nagement, when a thundering at the door proclaim-  
" ed the lady's arrival to the whole neighbourhood.  
" The new-made groom of the chambers instantly flew  
" to his post, happy in the thought of what he had  
" done, and held open the door, while his mistress  
" shewed her guests up stairs.

" The lady, who of course led the way, no sooner  
" entered the room, than she was struck with the sight  
" of the uncouth piece of furniture. Her delicacy  
" instantly took the alarm, she puckered her nostrils  
" up to her eyes, and turning away, exclaimed in a  
" voice of disgust, *Lard!* where am I got to?"

" The mistress of the *route*, who brought up the  
" rear, and had not yet come into the room to see the  
" horrid sight, nor heard distinctly what the lady said,  
" imagined she was taken suddenly ill, and ran up to  
" her to know what was the matter. *Lard!* woman!  
" (snuffled her ladyship through her handkerchief,  
" which she held to her nose) where have you brought  
" me? What is that?"

" It is impossible to express the astonishment and con-  
" fusion of the other, when she saw the unfortunate  
" chair. Ruined and undone! (exclaimed she, as she  
" fainted away on the floor, where she lay for some  
" time before she could be brought to herself.)

" In the mean while one of the company, perceiving  
" the cause of all this confusion, ordered it to be taken  
" away, and assuring her ladyship, that it must have

" been

“ been brought there by some mistake, as she herself  
 “ had been in the room but a few minutes before, when  
 “ she could vouch that there was no such thing to be  
 “ seen, her ladiship was pacified ; and, when the  
 “ mistress of the house at length recovered, conde-  
 “ scended to comfort her, and even staid four minutes  
 “ longer than she had designed (for she had many vi-  
 “ fits to make that afternoon, and could not possibly  
 “ sit down to cards) to shew that she was not offend-  
 “ ed; though, notwithstanding all her good nature,  
 “ she told the whole affair, with several ingenious il-  
 “ lustrations of her own, in every company she went  
 “ into that night ; which was the real motive of her  
 “ being in such haste to go away.

“ But this ridiculous end of an affair, that cost the  
 “ person before us so much anxiety, was not sufficient  
 “ to make her see her folly. she goes on still in the  
 “ same strain of awkward imitation, sacrificing every  
 “ solid happiness of life to the absurd vanity of striving  
 “ to appear in a character for which nature never de-  
 “ signed her.”

---

### CHAP. XIX.

*In what the great are easiest to be imitated. This humble ambition more dangerous, if less ridiculous, in man than in woman. Another interview with a couple of old acquaintances.*

“ **N**OR is her husband more fortunate in his at-  
 “ tempts of the same kind. Behold him yon-  
 “ der, dozing off his last night’s debauch. The vir-  
 “ tues of the great are generally above the ambition  
 “ of their inferiors ; but their follies and vices are of  
 “ easy imitation. By these they descend to the level  
 “ of the lowest part of the human species, who, proud  
 “ to resemble them in any thing, take every oppor-  
 “ nity of aping their example. Hence those unnat-  
 “ ural inconsistencies, which offend reason in every  
 “ view of life. Servant maids in silk gowns, and coun-

“ tess

" tesses drinking gin. Tradesmen keeping whores  
" and lords riding races.

" The bloated features and bursting bloodshot eyes  
" of this person shew how eagerly he imitates his bet-  
" ters in the most beastly vice that can disgrace a ra-  
" tional being; but his ambition stops not here. Re-  
" solved to be upon an equal footing with the free-  
" holders of the manor, he has made interest to be  
" put upon the jury of the court-leet, that he may  
" have an opportunity of displaying his abilities and  
" consequence.

" In speculation, it must appear advantageous to  
" have the trades-people admitted thus to share in the  
" government of the manor, as they should naturally  
" be supposed to understand their own mysteries best,  
" and for that reason be most capable of making such  
" regulations as should promote trade, as well as for  
" their own interest, most careful to prevent the land-  
" holders from burdening it with unjust or injudicious  
" impositions.

" But experience has proved the vanity of such ex-  
" pectations. No sooner can a tradesman get upon  
" the jury, than instead of taking care of the interest  
" of his trade, in general, he immediately enters into  
" a combination with the lord's servants; and, for  
" the sake of bringing their custom to his own shop,  
" assists them to carry every bye-law they propose to  
" serve any present purpose, however ruinous in its  
" consequences to the very trade in which he earns  
" his bread. Thus, for instance, a shoemaker, for  
" the sake of supplying shoes for his lordship's labour-  
" ers, shall consent to lay a tax upon leather, that  
" must ruin his craft in the end: and if they betray  
" their own trades in this manner, what will they  
" scruple to do to others?

" It is true, they take care to pay themselves well  
" for this prostitution; the badness of the goods they  
" supply giving them such an exorbitant profit in their  
" contracts, that they expect soon to be, and too of-  
" ten really are, raised above the necessity of attend-  
" ing to their business, at the same time that the  
" poor

“ poor labourers, who are obliged to take those goods  
“ as part of their wages, suffer hardships, shocking to  
“ humanity, from this double dishonesty.

“ But justice obliges me to acquit the person who  
“ gave occasion for these reflections from all such de-  
“ signs. Vanity was the sole motive for his getting  
“ upon the jury, and in the gratification of that con-  
“ sists his only pleasure and employment; though this  
“ vanity is, in its effect, no less prejudicial than the  
“ venality of the others; for, as the ambition of his  
“ shallow heart is to be upon good terms with his  
“ lordship's servants, he never refuses any thing they  
“ require: so that the only difference between his  
“ conduct and that of the others is, that he does those  
“ dirty jobs for nothing which they do for hire.

“ In contrast to these instances of vicious and absurd  
“ vanity, behold in yon tall meagre-looking person, and  
“ his wife, who sits behind him in the crowd, instances  
“ of meanness, equally vicious and out of character.

“ The place in which he stands shews the rank he  
“ holds among his lordship's servants, to which he has  
“ been raised, not for any personal merit in himself, or  
“ liking of his master, but solely on account of the  
“ influence, which his wealth gives him among the  
“ tenants; he being possessed of the greatest property  
“ in the whole manor.

“ It has been said, that Heaven shews its disregard  
“ for riches, by the unworthy objects on whom they  
“ are generally bestowed. The remark is rather witty  
“ than just; but, perhaps, there never could a strong-  
“ er instance be alledged in support of it than this  
“ person. Though his wealth exceeds not only the  
“ wants of nature and reason, but also almost the ve-  
“ ry wishes of avarice itself, his soul still yearns for  
“ more, with as much greediness as a wretch perish-  
“ ing of famine can for a morsel of bread. The whole  
“ business of his days, his dreams by night, are how-  
“ to encrease his boundless store, to do which there is  
“ not a mean or iniquitous art, invented by the per-  
“ verted ingenuity of the human mind, when sharper-

ed

He that  
DRU  
is a p  
nate  
force

IN  
from  
gamst  
tion,

“ ed and made desperate by want, which he will not practise.

“ Versed in the whole black mystery of gaming; how often has he drawn in unexperienced youth to ruin? How often have the rewards earned by the merits of illustrious ancestors, the fruits of the industry of ages, melted in the magic of his art, and sunk into his possession?

“ Nor is he content with this exertion of his skill, which, infamous as it really is, custom, that can efface the distinction of nature, has sanctified with the name of *polite*. For those whose fears may fortunately prevent their encountering him at his favourite weapons, cards and dice, he spreads the inexplicable snares of usury, keeping a public office for lending money to all who can give him security on every contingency of life, the chances of which he has calculated with such accuracy, that his expectations of gain are seldom disappointed. And this is the source of his influence, there being few of the tenants of the manor, and more especially of his lordship's servants, who are not in his debt. As for the place he holds in his lord's service, he sought it only for the lucrative emoluments which attend it. Stranger to every praise-worthy ambition, he sets honour at nought; and grasps even at power, only as it brings him profit.

---

## CHAP. XX.

*He that plays at Bowls must meet RUBS. The bitter DRUBB'D. An old fox caught napping. A penny saved is a penny got. Splendid œconomy; with the unfortunate candle adventure. A mortifying instance of the force of vanity.*

**I**N the occurrences of such a life, it is not possible for all his art, consummate as it is, to save him from some rubs. An instance in each character of a gamster and an usurer, will gratify honest indignation,

“ Exert-

“ Exerting his talents in the noble science of *betting*,  
“ some time ago, at a cricket-match, a butcher, whom  
“ he had taken in, (for the first rule of gaming is, that  
“ it levels all distinctions ; a porter, who can pull out  
“ a full purse, being equal to a lord) was so provoked  
“ at being *bit*, that he resolved to take satisfaction  
“ with his hands, for the mistake of his head, and paid  
“ him with a hearty *drubbing*.

“ Such an affair naturally made a noise ; but the sus-  
“ ferer had the address not only to evade the scandal,  
“ but even to turn it to his own advantage with his  
“ lord, making him believe that he had met with such  
“ an insult on account of his known attachment to his  
“ interest, the butcher being an avowed partizan of a  
“ certain gentleman’s, who was at that time going to  
“ law with his lordship for the best part of his estate.  
“ But he did not come off so much to his own sa-  
“ tisfaction in an affair that happened to him, some  
“ time after, in his other capacity of an usurer. A  
“ gentleman took up at his office a sum of money,  
“ payable at the death of an uncle to whom he was  
“ heir ; for which he mortgaged the reversion of his  
“ uncle’s estate : as he did not rightly understand the  
“ calculations, he agreed to pay an exorbitant premi-  
“ um ; but, his uncle dying very soon, when the usu-  
“ rer went to demand his debt, the gentleman expos-  
“ tulated with him on the unreasonableness of the terms  
“ which he had inadvertently submitted to, and offer-  
“ ed him the sum he had borrowed, with an handsome  
“ gratuity, beside the interest allowed by the law.  
“ But the other, unmoved by any thing he could say,  
“ insisted positively on his whole demand, and threat-  
“ ened to seize upon the estate mortgaged to him, if it  
“ was not paid directly.

“ Incensed at such iniquitous extortion, the gentle-  
“ man had immediate recourse to a learned practitioner  
“ of the law, to try if he could have redress ; who  
“ on perusing the deeds which had been executed be-  
“ tween them, found that by an oversight of all par-  
“ ties, the mortgage affected only a very small part of  
“ his estate, which was not worth half the sum lent

“ much

“ much less what was demanded ; a particular subde-  
“ nomination only, which had always been distinctly  
“ known from the rest, being named in the deeds. -

“ Though the gentleman was above taking any dis-  
“ honest advantage in such a case as this, he thought  
“ it justifiable to fight the devil at his own weapons,  
“ and defend himself by any means he could ; accord-  
“ ingly he sent the usurer word, that if he would not  
“ accept of his debt, with the bare legal interest, he  
“ might take possession of the estate mortgaged to him,  
“ as soon as pleased ; but at the same time, let him  
“ know what that estate was.

“ Surprized at such a message, the usurer instantly  
“ sent for his lawyers, who, upon consultation, infor-  
“ med him that the affair was too true, and the mis-  
“ take now irremediable ; and, therefore, he must on-  
“ ly strive to make the best he could of it. When he  
“ had vented his rage on his agents and lawyer, and  
“ cursed himself for confiding in them, he was not  
“ ashamed to go in person to the gentleman, to try if  
“ he could not prevail upon him, at least to give him  
“ the gratuity he had offered at first. But his arguments  
“ were now as ineffectual as the gentleman’s had been  
“ before ; and, for once, he was obliged to take only  
“ his just debt, where he had thought himself secure of  
“ sinking the whole estate.

“ While he labours with this assiduity to heap up  
“ wealth by every iniquitous means, his wife is equally  
“ diligent in her province, practising every species of  
“ parsimony, -however scandalous and unjust, to cut  
“ off her tradesmen’s bills, and shorten the most neces-  
“ sary expences of life by saving from the very bellies  
“ of her servants ; for, however her fortune may seem  
“ to raise her above attention to such minute œconomy,  
“ there is nothing by which money can possibly be got  
“ that she thinks beneath her. An affair that happen-  
“ ed not long since, will shew this in the strongest light.  
“ It has been remarked, that the most opposite and  
“ apparently irreconcileable passions often spring from  
“ the same cause, and inhabit the same breast. The  
“ profusion that, in a particular manner, marks the  
“ character

“ character of the present age, is blended with an a-  
“ varice so strong, as to seem capable of counteracting  
“ all its effects. An incontestable instance of this is the  
“ mean practice which prevails among those whose ele-  
“ vated rank makes them lead the mode, of permitting  
“ their servants to receive hire from their guests. Up-  
“ on this practice some of superior economy have im-  
“ proved so far as to lay a tax upon it, and bargain with  
“ their footmen to defray a great part of the expence of  
“ their entertainments out of these scandalous perqui-  
“ sites.

“ But even this did not satisfy this lady. Her rank,  
“ as well as her eager passion for play, laid her under  
“ a kind of necessity of making a splendid appearance,  
“ and inviting as much company as she could to her  
“ gaming parties. I have observed that the expence  
“ of these entertainments was borne by the servants.  
“ But still there was one thing which she had set her  
“ heart upon; though custom had not *yet* given her a  
“ right to it; this was the pieces of candles that re-  
“ mained after the company retired from her routes,  
“ which she thought would serve in her family on or-  
“ dinary occasions, and save the expence of buying;  
“ but how to get them was the difficulty, as the foot-  
“ men who found the lights retained them as their  
“ due.

“ At length, one night; when the company by some  
“ accident broke up much sooner than ordinary, so that  
“ the candles were not half burned out, she was not able  
“ to resist the temptation, but resolved to have them  
“ some way or other. Accordingly, as soon as the hur-  
“ ry was over, and the servants, as she thought, all  
“ gone to sleep, she stole out of her bed, and went  
“ down stairs, naked to her shift as she was, with a  
“ design to steal them; which she imagined she might  
“ easily do, as the servants, impatient to get rest after  
“ their fatigue, used only to blow them out, and to  
“ leave them in the candle-sticks, till they went to clean  
“ up the rooms next morning.

“ It happened unluckily that one of the footmen  
“ suspected some of his fellows had found a way of

“ opening

" opening the box, in which their alms-money (for literally, they stood like beggars to receive it) was kept, till it was divided, and resolved to be upon the watch this night to try if he could discover the thief.

" He had not waited long, when he heard his mistress treading softly through the apartments; and imagining that she was the person he watched for, (for there was no light to let him see who it was) he stood still till she came to him, and then, spreading his arms in her way, caught her, loaded as she was with the pieces of candles, with which she had filled the fore part of her shift; for she had, in her haste, forgot to bring any thing to carry them off.

" It is easy to conceive her surprize and confusion at such an encounter; nor was the fellow's much less. But the discovery of her situation soon restored him to his senses, and instantly suggested the method of his revenge. " And so, my dear, (said he) you want wax-candles! But I'll make you pay for your pilfering." Saying which he prepared to gratify a passion more natural at least, if not more delicate, than that which brought her into such a scrape.

" The lady, who could not be at a loss to know what he designed, was in the highest distress. Her virtue instantly took the alarm at such an attempt; but how to avoid it was the difficulty. If she spoke to refuse him, she knew her voice would betray her, and she should be exposed for ever, at the same time that the fear of losing her booty prevented her letting go her hold to struggle with him, and strive to repel force by force. It is not easy to say what resolution she would have taken in such an embarrassment; or, indeed, whether she would have taken any before it was too late, had not a very singular circumstance most unexpectedly proved the safe-guard of her honour.

" The fellow had scarce taken her in his arms, when the perfumes, which steamed from every part of her, gave such offence to his nostrils, accustomed to no stinks but those of nature, that, his stomach

" instantly

“ instantly turning, he discharged its contents full in  
“ her face, before he had time to let her go; and  
“ then damning her for a stinking brimstone, spurned  
“ her from him with abhorrence. As soon as she had  
“ wiped her face with her sleeve, and recovered her  
“ breath, she picked up some of the candles which  
“ she had dropped, and retired, the manner of her  
“ deliverance a good deal lessening the pleasure of it;  
“ though it was some satisfaction to her, however, to  
“ think that she had preserved her booty, and escaped  
“ undiscovered.

“ But, in the latter, she soon had the mortification  
“ to find herself deceived. The fellow told the whole  
“ story, with some obvious additions, to all the ser-  
“ vants next morning at breakfast, when her waiting-  
“ woman, (from whom she could not possibly conceal  
“ some part of it, as she was obliged to have recourse  
“ to her assistance to get herself cleaned; though at  
“ the same time she gave her the strictest charge not  
“ to mention a syllable of the matter, laying it upon  
“ her husband, who, she said, had drank a little too  
“ freely the night before) her woman, I say out of a  
“ principle of conscience, and that none of her inno-  
“ cent fellow-servants should be under such a scandal-  
“ ous aspersion, betrayed the whole secret to them all;  
“ from whom, through the channel of intelligence of  
“ their fraternity, it soon spread over the whole vil-  
“ lage.

“ The feast, you see, is finished, at which you must  
“ have observed that the hospitable entertainers and  
“ their guests seemed to have exchanged characters;  
“ the former, willing to have something for their mo-  
“ ney, eating as voraciously as if they were half starv-  
“ ed, and never expected to meet so good a meal  
“ again; while the latter have been wholly taken up  
“ in looking about them, and making good-natured  
“ remarks on every thing they have seen. But, soft!  
“ a curious scene yonder demands your attention for  
“ a moment, after which we will return to the la-  
“ day’s husband again, who will supply more matter  
“ for your observation.”

Just as my guide said this, I heard an uproar at the door of the house, and turning about to see what was the occasion of it, was witness to a scene sufficiently ridiculous to have put vanity itself out of countenance.

As his lordship's late agent, who had been invited by the villagers to their feast, was going away, a parcel of attorneys clerks and bailiffs, who had been employed by him while he conducted the law-suit, gathered about him, and insisted on carrying him in triumph to his own house on their shoulders.

The zeal of the poor fellows on this occasion was natural. The agent had given them constant employment, in which, to do them justice, they had earned their wages very well, and on his losing his place, they apprehended the suit would be made up some how, and they should want work; they therefore took this method of testifying their grateful regard for him, which they imagined might also convey an advantageous opinion of them to his successor; but the affected modesty with which he faintly repelled their attempts, while the vanity of his heart glistened through the thin disguise, shewed in the most mortifying light the inability of man's boasted reason to resist the impulse of the most contemptible passions. The sight was too painful; I turned away, vexed and disgusted, while he went off intoxicated with their empty shouts and applause.

The tumult and confusion at the breaking up of the company are not to be described. " You see (said my " guide) the conclusion of an affair that raised such " expectation. The life of man has not unaptly been " compared to a feast, from whence some depart empty, others satiated: and all unsatisfied and disappoint- " ed, and as impatient to get away as they were eager " to come. We will leave the entertainers to congra- " tulate themselves on their elegant taste and judicious " conduct in this important matter, to spread the fame " of which they have resolved to hire the common cri- " er, to proclaim the bill of fare of their sumptuous " entertainment at the market-cross, and follow that " person who, as I told you, will soon do something " that shall compleat his character."

## C H A P. XXI.

*Interesting hints, which set some matters much canvassed in a new light.*

**A**S soon as his lordship was returned home from the feast, his servants met together to consult upon the conduct proper for them to observe in the present critical conjuncture. "While these people are making the unmeaning preambles (said my guide) with which the most urgent business must be ushered in, I'll give you a few leading hints, to enable you to enter the readier into the spirit of the scene opening before you.

" You must have observed that the bubble of the day, the subject that engrosses the thoughts of all the inhabitants of the manor, is the law suit in which they are at present engaged. About this they are divided into two parties, directly opposite to each other in their opinions; one for prosecuting it with the utmost vigour, without considering what consequences may attend such a conduct, or setting any limits to their expectations; the other for compounding the dispute almost at any rate, to save the expence of carrying it on. At the head of the latter is the person whom we have followed hither; as the former flatter themselves that they have the late agent on their side, because he had conducted it with judgment and spirit, while he was in his office.

" It is hard to say which of these parties acts on the most irrational principles. The one, from a mean and absurd motive of parsimony, would betray the honour of their lord, and the interest of the manor, the other, composed principally of the various retainers of the law, and tradesmen who make an advantage of supplying them with goods, on the lord's account, from motives equally selfish, though disguised under the pompous pretext of public spirit, and a passion for glory, which never fail to take with the mob, are for pushing on their successes against the dictates of reason and justice, magnifying every advantage

“ advantage that had been gained as of the most essential importance, and not only grasping at more, but also insisting on keeping all they have gotten; while the former with equal sincerity decry them as insignificant, and not worth the trouble and expence of acquiring, much less of retaining, and therefore are for giving up them all indiscriminately.

“ In the same manner do they differ about the conduct to be observed with some of their neighbours, who have taken part with them in the dispute; these are for dropping them directly, and leaving them to shift for themselves as well as they can, without regard to any promises which may have been made them to the contrary, or to their being drawn into the scrape, merely because of their being some way connected with this manor; as the others are for supporting them, right or wrong, without ever considering whether they are able to bear such an expence or not.

“ It is obvious that the right course lies in the middle between these opinions, could their directors divest themselves of prejudice, to discern and find resolution to pursue it. As the suit was entered into at first not wantonly, or from a litigious disposition, but to assert a legal right, and recover losses unjustly suffered; it would be both dishonourable and weak to drop it before those ends are obtained; and if in the course of the contest some acquisitions have been made, which were originally even claimed, the voice of reason directs to retain as many of them as shall indemnify for the expences of the law-suit, and disable the aggressors from attempting the like injustice for the future; as, on the other hand, when that right is incontestably established, and not only those losses recovered, but also a sufficient indemnification for the past, and security against the future obtained, to grasp at more inverts the nature of the contest, and makes those the aggressors who before had justice on their side.

“ The same middle rule holds equally good in respect to their associates in the suit; such of them as have been involved in it merely on account of their con-

nection

" nection with the manor, should most certainly be pro-  
 " tected; that is, if it can be done without ruining  
 " their protectors; farther than which nothing can  
 " oblige a community to go. Where that cannot be,  
 " self-preservation cancels every tie; and prudence  
 " commands to yield to a necessity that cannot be re-  
 " fisted, till an happier hour shall offer for redressing  
 " their grievances, and making them amends for their  
 " losses; and for those who may have entered into the  
 " dispute, to serve particular purposes of their own,  
 " or for the sake of hire, it is abusing honour to say  
 " that it is any way concerned to keep up a connection  
 " with them, one moment longer than it is convenient.  
 " All that is necessary to be done is, not to break with  
 " them without giving them timely notice to provide  
 " for their own safety.

" Of this the steward is not insensible; but, though  
 " he is secure of his lord's concurrence in whatever he  
 " thinks proper to do, there are difficulties in his way,  
 " which make him at a loss how to proceed, and im-  
 " bitter the enjoyment of his envied power. The  
 " party which is for continuing the suit is against him  
 " of course, from the circumstance of his coming into  
 " the management of affairs in the place of their fa-  
 " vorite, the late agent; (as for the old steward,  
 " though some of them perhaps have not yet forgot  
 " the good cheer he used to give, as they have no op-  
 " nion of his capacity for business, they give them-  
 " selves no great concern about his dismission) and even  
 " the more rational of those who wish to see the dis-  
 " pute terminated, in an amicable and just manner, are  
 " afraid he will be in such haste to make it up, in hopes  
 " of securing himself in his place, that he will not take  
 " sufficient care of their interests, nor make the most  
 " of the advantages gained by his predecessor, for fear  
 " any part of the merit should redound to him.

" Opposed thus by one party, and distrusted by the  
 " other, he stands in the utmost embarrassment, un-  
 " able to follow the dictates of his own judgment,  
 " and obliged to adopt the measures of those who  
 " will join with him. These are they who are for

*compounding*

" compounding matters at any rate, at the head of whom  
 " is this person, who, as his great property makes a  
 " large portion of the expence of the suit fall to his  
 " share, has ever been averse to carrying it on, weep-  
 " ing over the successes which have attended it, as he  
 " imagined they would raise the expectations of the  
 " tenants still higher, and consequently make the com-  
 " position he wanted to bring about more difficult.

" I have drawn this short sketch, to assist your judg-  
 " ment in a matter which prejudice and party represent  
 " in such different colours. To some, perhaps, the  
 " concerns of a private manor may not seem worth so  
 " much trouble; but the heart of man, and the mo-  
 " tives of his actions, which are the objects of your  
 " observations, are often as clearly shewn in such  
 " trifles as in matters of the greatest moment. But  
 " soft! the grand debate begins."

## C H A P. XXII.

*Disputes will arise, where every man is for himself. A sure method of removing scruples, and reconciling opposite opinions. The character of the GRAND COMPOUNDER finished. The Conclusion.*

C O M P L I M E N T S being mutually paid, and judg-  
 " ment passed upon the feast, and the dress and  
 " characters of the entertainers and their various guests,  
 " the company at length seated themselves round a table,  
 " and the steward proceeded to business.

" I have desired this meeting, gentlemen, (said he)  
 " that I may have your advice how to act in the affair  
 " of this law-suit in which we are entangled. Whe-  
 " ther it is to be carried on, or made up? and how  
 " we are to accomplish which ever we resolve upon?  
 " It is a matter of consequence, and requires the most  
 " deliberate care and attention."

" Whether the law-suit is to be carried on, or made  
 " up, sir! (answered the *grand compounder*) cannot  
 " admit of a moment's doubt with any one who con-  
 " siders the distressed situation to which we are redu-

“ ced by it. All our ready money is gone, and our farms mortgaged so deeply that no one will lend us any more. How then shall we carry it on, if we were so inclined? Or, how far are we to go, even if we were able? When first we begun it we were told that a term or two would certainly bring our adversary to reason. But we have gone on term after term, I don’t know how long, at an expence that no other people upon earth would be such fools as to undertake; and still are as far from a conclusion as the moment we set out. As for the mighty advantages, which the lawyers and their party make such a noise about, what have they done but filled our wise heads with notions of new demands, which our adversary will never comply with; and we should not have dreamed of making, had it not been for them: So that the more advantages, as they are called, we gain, the farther we are from the conclusion we wish for. The lawyers, indeed, have gained advantages. They receive their fees from us, and extort costs from the adversary also; which, in our great wisdom, we have given up to them, as an encouragement to be honest, instead of reimbursing ourselves with them as we ought; and therefore they are in the right to spin out the suit as long as they can. But I hope their reign is at an end; and that we have seen our folly too plainly, to be dupes to them any longer. My opinion, therefore, Mr. Steward, is, that we compound the matter directly. We must take care of ourselves. *Any* composition in our case is better than *none*.

“ It is to be hoped (replied one who sat at the other side of the table, and by his green bag full of papers, appeared to be their clerk in court) that Mr. Steward will have more regard to his own character (a consideration that appears to have lost all weight with the gentleman who spoke last) as well as to his lordship’s honour and the interest of the manor, than to be influenced by such sordid, base advice. It has been owing to such scandalous complaints of our inability to carry on the suit, that it has continued so long, they only having encouraged our adversary to

“ persist,

" persist, not from any hope of getting the better of us  
" fairly, but of wearing out our resolution; and if this  
" is not directly betraying his lordship, the consequence  
" is just as bad."

So home a charge put the *compounder* out of all patience. He started up sputtering and foaming like a madman, for his passion had deprived him of the power of utterance, and tearing open his waistcoat, was going to demand instant satisfaction from his accuser. But a gentleman who sat at the upper end of the table interposed, and catching hold of his hand, " For Heaven's sake, Sir, (said he) how can you take notice of what he says? The gentleman perhaps thinks that he will have no more business, if the suit should be made up, and therefore says any thing to support it. But you have a fortune of your own, and do not depend upon the precarious income of a place."

" Whatever I depend on, (returned the clerk eagerly) I do not prostitute my honour and abilities, and make myself the hackney tool of every party that is uppermost, to keep that place, changing like a weather-cock with every gust of wind, and counter-acting one day the measures of the last, as I happen to be ordered."

Such reflections were too general. Every mouth was instantly open to reply, when the steward commanding silence, with a tone and air of authority, " I was in hopes, gentlemen (said he) that you would have thought proper to deliberate coolly on the matter I proposed to you; but, instead of that, you have fallen out among yourselves, and that about nothing at all. You may all be assured, that whatever measures I take, no gentleman here shall be a sufferer. You, Mr. Clerk, need not be so warm! If the suit is made up, there are other places as profitable as the one you have at present. I design to make you first clerk in my own office, which I hope will remove all your scruples; and on the other hand, if it cannot be made up quite so readily as you, Sir, (addressing himself to the *grand compounder*) may wish, there are ways of making up to you, not only

“ only what you may suffer by the delay, but also  
 “ good part of what you have been out of pocket al-  
 “ ready; so that you had no occasion for being so much  
 “ alarmed at what the gentleman said, nor stripping to  
 “ fight with him, like a porter. Such wrangling is  
 “ most unbecoming gentlemen.”

This speech healed all animosities, and restored the general harmony in a moment. The clerk bowed with a smile of the most cheerful acquiescence; and the *grand compounder*, unable to conceal his joy, blubbered out, between laughing and crying, “ I am sorry, “ Sir, that I should misbehave myself before you; but “ it was impossible to bear such an asperion unmoved. “ I am sure I have shewn my attachment to his lord- “ ship’s honour and interest in many different instances “ in the several capacities I have served him in. When “ I was *cockswain of his barge*, I obliged his watermen “ to wear a particular livery, at their own expence, “ and regulated their rank; and t’other day again, “ when I was steward of the manor on the other side “ of the river, I drove away that *smuggler* and his gang “ who put them all into such a panick, by the great “ preparations which I made to attack them; and even “ in this very affair of the law-suit, I have been at “ greater expence than any man in the whole manor; “ and it is very hard if a man may not even speak, who “ parts with so much money for nothing. I am sure it “ has gone to my heart many a time, when I have given “ away the rent of a whole farm at once! After all “ this, I say, it is too-much to be accused of betraying “ his interest and honour. But, as I can depend upon “ your word, I shall think no more of it.”

When the *grand compounder* had thus unburdened his heart, the steward once more resumed the subject of their meeting. “ As for this law-suit, gentlemen, “ (said he) I own I am heartily tired of it, as I pre- “ sume every man in his senses is: and am determined “ to make it up as soon as I can, that is, without “ prejudice to his lordship’s honour and the real in- “ terest of the manor, which, however some people “ may pretend to distinguish between them, are essen- “ tially

"tially one and the same thing. But how to bring this about is the difficulty. The mob is intoxicated with our successes to such a degree, that they would be ready to drag any man through the kennel who should only mention stopping, though they do not even know what they would be at, in going on. In these circumstances, I think it will be the best way to let our adversary privately know, that we are not averse to an accommodation; and that if he will send one of his people here with such a proposal, to give a colour to the affair, one of us will go to him, with full power to settle all matters in dispute between us. In the mean while we must let the lawyers go on, at least till the end of the term, to keep the mob in good humour; and when the affair is finished, we must contrive to throw some new bubble or other up in the air, for them to gaze at, which may divert their attention from every thing else. This, gentlemen, is my opinion: I only am at a loss for a proper person to send. It must be one of some consequence to give weight to what he says, and who does not regard the abuse and insults of the mob, of which he will probably be the chief object, in the first fallies of their resentment, before there can be any thing done to appease them."

"I am the man! (said the *grand compounder*, starting up in a transport) I am the man! I have given proof, that I defy the resentment of the most desperate mob; and no person's word will have more weight with our adversary than mine. I am intimately acquainted with most of his principal servants, with whom I have all along kept up a friendly intercourse; which has made him think that I am well inclined to his interest; so that he will have proper regard to every thing I propose. Let me but go; and I will undertake to settle every thing."

"With all my heart, Sir, (answered the steward) you shall go since you desire it. But take care that your eagerness is not seen through, and taken advantage of. I'll draw up your instructions without delay, and give you a sum of money to bear your charges,

“ charges that shall you make easy ; for I know you are  
“ not extravagant in your expences.”

“ And do, pray, Sir, (added the *grand compounder*)  
“ add some little matter on my wife’s account. I know  
“ she will be for going too. It will not be thrown a-  
“ way : she has an excellent knack at fishing out secrets,  
“ and will be a great assistance to me.”

“ Well, Sir, (returned the steward) we shall not  
“ differ about that. But, gentlemen, there is one thing  
“ more, which I must observe to you. As you all ap-  
“ prove of this step, I shall expect that when the ac-  
“ commodation is concluded, you will all sign it as well  
“ as I ; for light as some people make of the resentmen-  
“ of a mob, I do not chuse to stand single before it  
“ neither.”

Matters being thus settled, the company broke up,  
and the *grand compounder*, in the fullness of his joy  
muttered to himself as he passed me, “ Aye! aye!  
“ let me alone to compound matters ! I shall not stand  
“ upon terms. *Any* composition is better than *none* !  
I was so provoked at his premeditated baseness, that  
forgetting the positive injunction of my guide, I could  
not forbear crying out aloud, Villain ! take that !” and  
at the same time gave him a kick on the posteriors with  
all my might.

But I soon had reason to repent of my rashness. The  
whole scene instantly vanished ! I awoke from my *Reverie* ; and found myself sitting in the same chair, where  
I had forgot myself a few hours before, with the ad-  
ditional vexation of having broken my shin against the  
frame of the table by my inconsiderate kick.

## N E W B O O K S,

Sold by DILLON CHAMBERLAIN, No. 5, in  
College Green.

1. Macpherson's History of Great Britain from the Restoration to the Accession of the House of Hanover. In 4 Vols. Vol. III. and IV. consist of Original Papers; containing the Secret History of Great Britain from the Restoration to the Accession of the House of Hanover. To which are prefixed Extracts from the Life of James II. as written by Himself. Price 1 l. 6 s. — They are printed to match the cheap Edition of Hume, and make a valuable Continuation.

¶ Mr. Macpherson is unexceptionably the best informed Historian that hath wrote on this or any other Period of English History; like Tacitus he makes his Readers acquainted with the Springs or secret Sources of the Actions he records, and has developed Characters which hitherto the Public were taught to consider as sacred, but whose Laurels fell withered to the Ground on being viewed in the resplendent Mirror of Truth. In short, he hath thrown Lights on this important Period of our History, which hitherto we were unacquainted with.

2. Annual Register: or, a View of the History, Politics, and Literature of the Years 1758 — 1775, inclusive, being from the Commencement. In 18 Vols. octavo. Price 5 l. 17 s. Any Volume may be had separate at 6 s. 6 d. each.

¶ These Volumes, one of which is published every Year, (confessedly the best Compilation extant) contain an History of Europe for the Year, written purposely for this Work, with impartiality and precision; State Papers, which elucidate the History or are referred to in it; Characters and Anecdotes of eminent Persons; Pieces of Natural History; Discoveries in Arts and Sciences; Antiquities; useful Projects; miscellaneous Essays; select Poetry; and general Occurrences; in short, every thing worth preserving.

3. Smith's

## NEW BOOKS.

3. Smith's Enquiry into the Nature and Causes of the Wealth of Nations. 3 Vols. 8vo. on fine paper, 19 s. 6 d.
4. Chandler's Travels in Greece; or an Account of a Tour made at the Expence of the Society of Dilettanti. 8vo. 5 s. 5 d.
5. Millar's (Mrs.) Letters from Italy, describing the Manners, Customs, Antiquities, Paintings, &c. of that Country, in the Years 1770, and 1771. To a Friend residing in France. 3 Vols. 8 s. 1½ d.
6. Letters from Edinburgh; written in the Years 1774 and 1775: containing Observations on the Diversions, Customs, Manners, and Laws of the Scotch Nation, during a six Months Residence in Edinburgh. 2 Vols. 5 s. 5 d.
7. Gray's Works. To which are prefixed, Memoirs of his Life and Writings. By W. Mason, M. A. 2 Vols. 6 s. 6 d.
8. Price's Observations on the Nature of Civil Liberty, the Principles of Government, and the Justice and Policy of the War with America, &c. 2 s. 2 d.
9. Fordyce's Character and Conduct of the Female Sex, and the Advantages to be derived by Young Men from the Society of Virtuous Women. Sewed 1 s. 1 d.
10. The Maiden Aunt: written by a Lady. 3 Vols. in one, 2 s. 8½ d.
11. Emma: or, The Child of Sorrow. 2 Vols. 5 s. 5 d.
12. Voltaire's Young James, or the Sage and Atheist. An English Story. 2 s. 2 d.
13. Johnsoniana:

## NEW BOOKS.

13. *Johnsoniana: or, a Collection of the Bon Mots, &c. of Dr. Johnson and others. Together with the choice Sentences of Publius Syrus.* Sewed 1 s. 1 d.

14. *Disinterested Love: or, the History of Sir Charles Royston, and Emily Lesley.* 2 s. 8½ d.

15. *The School for Husbands: written by a Lady.* 2 s. 8½ d.

16. *The Comic Romance of Monsieur Scarron.* Translated by Oliver Goldsmith. 2 Vols. 5s. 5d.

17. *The New Merry Companion, or, Vocal Remembrancer. A Collection of Songs.* Sewed 1 s. 1 d.

18. *Marshall's Travels through Holland, Flanders, Germany, Denmark, Sweden, Lapland, Russia, the Ukraine and Poland, in the Years 1768, 1769, and 1770. In which is particularly minuted the Present State of those Countries, respecting their Agriculture, Population, Manufactures, Commerce, the Arts and useful Undertakings.* 3 Vols. 8s. 1½ d.

19. *Twiss's Travels through Portugal and Spain, in 1772 and 1773, illustrated with Cuts.* 2 Vols. 5s. 5d.

20. *Twiss's Tour in Ireland in 1775, with a View of the Salmon Leap at Ballyshannon.* 2 s. 8½ d.

21. *The Annual Register, or a View of the History, Politics, and Literature for the Year 1775.* — This Volume contains an impartial and copious History of American Affairs, now so exceedingly interesting, and is wrote with great Spirit, good Sense and Perspicuity.

As every Volume of this entertaining and necessary Work is unconnected with each other, such Gentlemen as do not chuse to take it up from its Commencement in 1758, may begin with any Year they please; and it is presumed the Year 1774, in which the Disputes

## NEW BOOKS.

Disputes between England and her American Colonies began to thicken, as it contains the Proceedings of Parliament, Letters, Petitions, Addresses, Associations, Abstracts of Acts, &c. &c. previous to the unhappy Rupture which hath since broke out between them, and which elucidates the History, will be thought not an uninteresting Period.

22. Letters of the late Rev. Mr. Laurence Sterne, to his most intimate Friends. With a Fragment in the Manner of Rabelais. To which are prefixed Memoirs of his Life and Family, written by Himself, and published by his Daughter Mrs. Medalle. 3s. 3d.

23. A Relation of a Journey to the Glaciers in the Dutchy of Savoy. 2s. 8 $\frac{1}{2}$ d.

24. A Four Months Tour through France. 2s. 8 $\frac{1}{2}$ d.

25. John Buncle, Junior, Gentleman. 2s. 8 $\frac{1}{2}$ d.

26. Johnson's New Gazetteer: or, Geographical Companion. Containing a general and concise Account of all the Empires, Kingdoms, States, Provinces, Cities, Towns, Seas, Harbours, Bays, Rivers, Lakes and Mountains, in the known World: And more particularly in Great Britain, Ireland, and America. Being intended as a useful Vade Mecum for the Readers of public News papers, and for young Students in Geography. 2s. 8 $\frac{1}{2}$ d.

27. Interesting Letters of Pope Clement XIV. [Ganganelli.] To which are prefixed, Anecdotes of his Life. 2 Vols. 5s. 5d.

28. Watson's History of the Reign of Philip the Second, King of Spain. 2 Vols. 8vo. 13s.

29. Moral Tales. Translated from the French of Madame le Prince de Beaumont. 5s. 5d.

30. Price's

## NEW BOOKS.

30. Price's Additional Observations on the Nature and Value of Civil Liberty, and the War with America. Also, Observations on Schemes for raising Money by Public Loans; an Historical Deduction and Analysis of the National Debt; and a brief Account of the Debts and Resources of France. 2s. 8½d.

31. Miscellaneous Works of the late Philip Dormer Stanhope, Earl of Chesterfield: Consisting of Letters to his Friends, never before printed, and various other Articles. To which are prefixed, Memoirs of his Life, tending to illustrate the civil, literary, and political History of his Time. By M. Maty, M. D. 3 Vols. 8vo. 1 l. 2s. 9d.

32. The Economy of Beauty; in a Series of Fables: Addressed to the Ladies. By Dr. Cosens. 2s. 8½d.

33. Arabian Nights Entertainments: Consisting of one Thousand and one Stories, told by the Sultaness of the Indies, to divert the Sultan from the Execution of a bloody Vow he had made to marry a Lady every Day, and have her cut off next Morning, to avenge himself for the Disloyalty of his first Sultaness, &c. Containing a better Account of the Customs, Manners, and Religion, of the Eastern Nations, viz. Tartars, Persians and Indians, than is to be met with in any Author hitherto published. Translated into French from the Arabian MSS. by M. Galland. 4 Vols. 10s. 10d.

34. Fieldings Amelia. A new Edition, revised and corrected by the Author. 2 Vols. 5s. 5d.

35. Hawkesworth's Telemachus. 3s. 3d.

36. Marmontel's Bellisarius. 2s. 8½d.

37. The Circle of Sciences, 8 Vols. 8s. 8d.

38. Langhorn's Frederic and Pharamond; or, the Consolations of Human Life. Sewed 1s. 1d.

39. Charlevoix's

MLZ  
Levett  
1945

NEW BOOKS.

39. Charlevoix's History of Paraguay, 2 Vols. 8vo.  
10s. 10d.

40. History of the Adventures of Arthur O'Bradley.  
2 s. 2 d.

41. Lewis's experimental History of the Materia Medica, or of the natural and artificial Substances made use of in Medicine, 2 Vols. 8vo. 10s. 10d.

42. Ruffhead's Life of Alexander Pope, Esq. with critical Essay on his Writings and Genius, and M. Pope's Letters to a Lady, (never before published) 2 Vols. 5 s. 5 d.

43. Sharp's Letters from Italy, in the Year 1765 and 1766. 2 s. 8½ d.

44. Lewis's Patriot King Display'd, in the Life and Reign of Henry VIII. 2 s. 8½ d.

45. Mayhew's Sermons to young Men. 2 Vols. 5s. 5d.

46. Thicknesse's Observations on the French Nation 2 s. 2 d.

47. Nugent's Travels through Germany. With a particular Account of the Courts of Mecklenburgh 2 Vols. 5 s. 5 d.

48. Smollet's Travels through France and Italy, with a particular Description of the Town, Territory and Climate of Nice. 2 Vols. 5 s. 5 d.

49. Travels of a Philosopher: or, Observations on the Manners and Arts of various Nations in Africa and Asia. 2 s. 2 d.

50. Ahiman Rezon: or, a Help to a Brother. Containing the Old and New Regulations, Charges, &c. &c. a large Collection of Masons Songs, Toasts, Prologues, Epilogues, and Solomon's Temple, an Oratorio. Sewed 1 s. 1 d.